NARRATING EARLY ISLĀMIC HISTORY

by

Karim Samji

A dissertation submitted in partial fulfillment
of the requirements for the degree of
Doctor of Philosophy
(Near Eastern Studies)
in The University of Michigan
2013

Doctoral Committee:

      Professor Michael David Bonner, Co-Chair
      Associate Professor Gottfried J. Hagen, Co-Chair
      Assistant Professor Hakkı Erdem Çıpa
      Assistant Professor Ellen Muehlberger

Many fail to grasp what they have seen and cannot judge what they have learned,
although they tell themselves they know.

Heraclitus

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Chapter Three: Middle Proto-Islām

Chapter Four: Late Proto-Islām

Bibliography

LIST OF MAPS

Map

LIST OF TABLES

Table

ABBREVIATIONS

AQ	*Anthropological Quarterly*
BSOAS	*Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies*
CSSH	*Comparative Studies in Society and History*
EA	*Encyclopedia of Anthropology*
EI^1	*Encyclopaedia of Islam.* 1st ed.
EI^2	*Encyclopaedia of Islam.* 2nd ed.
EI^3	*Encyclopaedia of Islam.* 3rd ed.
EI$_S$	*Encyclopaedia Islamica*
EQ	*Encyclopaedia of the Qur'ān*
ER^2	*Encyclopedia of Religion.* 2nd ed.
HT	*History and Theory*
JAL	*Journal of Arabic Literature*
JAOS	*Journal of the American Oriental Society*
JESHO	*Journal of the Economic and Social History of the Orient*
JH	*Jewish History*
JJIS	*al-Jāmiʿah Journal of Islamic Studies*
JMEMS	*Journal of Medieval and Early Modern Studies*
JPR	*Journal of Peace Research*
JRAS	*Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland*
JSAI	*Jerusalem Studies in Arabic and Islam*
JSAMES	*Journal of South Asian and Middle Eastern Studies*
JSS	*Journal of Semitic Studies*
M/Medina	*Muhammad at Medina*
M/Mecca	*Muhammad at Mecca*
M/Prophet	*Muhammad: Prophet and Statesman*
Q	*Qur'ān*
SAI	*Studia Arabistyczne i Islamistyczne*
SI	*Studia Islamica*
SJA	*Southwestern Journal of Anthropology*
TS	*Theory and Society*

CHAPTER ONE

NARRATING HISTORY

Introduction

<u>Research Questions</u>

Despite the overwhelming global presence of Islām – in its multiple religious, political, social, cultural, and intellectual forms – the history of early Islām continues to elude historians. Written over a century after the death of Muḥammad, extant Arabic sources reveal little about the history of early Islām. In the last century, source-critical, tradition-critical, and skeptical historians have grappled with the sources without reaching a consensus. Recent studies demonstrating the unreliability of sources once held to be foundational have only further compounded the problem. As a result, early Islāmic historiography has reached an impasse. *Narrating Early Islāmic History* tackles the central methodological questions looming behind the problem. This research project thoroughly answers three questions: (i) How is the problem of early Islāmic history framed? (ii) What is the entry point into the past? (iii) How can early Islāmic history be reconstructed? Consequently, this dissertation mainly addresses methodological issues in order to rethink past approaches and develop new ones. To this end, the dissertation incorporates authoritative primary and secondary sources from Arabic, Persian, German, and Italian that have long been neglected by specialists in the field.

<u>Research Summary</u>

The significance of this doctoral research rests in the fact that it has discovered fresh approaches to the entrenched problem of historical reconstruction. (i) In terms of framing the problem of early Islāmic history, this dissertation has formulated the concept of 'proto-Islāmic' history. This concept bypasses the negative false dichotomies perpetuated by current chronological divisions. (ii) This dissertation has identified in the annals of Islāmic history a unique entry point into the proto-Islāmic period, namely, the *ridda* or so-called *Apostasia Arabum*. (iii) Based upon these findings, this dissertation has developed the 'narrative method' for reconstructing the damaged, fragmentary history of proto-Islām. In particular, it restores the socio-economic, political, and geographic context of late antique Arabia. The results produced by this boundary-breaking method prove to be astounding. *Narrating Early Islāmic History* is organized into two sections: Historiography and Historical Reconstruction. Chapter 1 advances solutions to longstanding historiographical problems surrounding early Islāmic history. Chapters 2 through 4 reconstruct proto-Islāmic history with special reference to the Musaylima movement in central Arabia and the Muḥammad movement in western Arabia.

Historiography

<u>Historical Criticism</u>

Julius Wellhausen's "Prolegomena zur ältesten Geschichte des Islams" inaugurated the source-critical phase in Islāmic historiography.[1] This groundbreaking work sought to accomplish for Islāmic studies what Wellhausen's influential documentary hypothesis had done for biblical studies just two decades earlier. Made possible by the recent availability of al-Ṭabarī's (d. 923 C.E.) chronography,[2] Wellhausen sought to identify

stratified layers hidden beneath the homogenous narrative of later historians such as Ibn al-Athīr (d. 1233 C.E.).[3]   Sifting through the heterogeneous – and supposedly unprocessed[4] – reports preserved in al-Ṭabarī's compilation, Wellhausen identified two dominant schools of early Arabic historiography, namely, the ʿIrāqī and Madīnan. Wellhausen maintained that the individual compilations produced by each of these schools constituted self-contained units, each with its own overarching bias imposed upon the material by its compiler.[5] Juxtaposing these two sets of reports culled from al-Ṭabarī, Wellhausen was intent on determining their relative value for the purpose of historical reconstruction. Detecting a tribal bias at work in the reports of the Kūfan Sayf b. ʿUmar al-Tamīmī (d. ca. 800 C.E.), Wellhausen subjected the ʿIrāqī school to a devastating critique. He concluded that the Madīnan reports merited more credence.

Source-criticism attracted many practitioners. Noteworthy among these were M.J. de Goeje, N. Mednikov, and L. Caetani. For instance, in his monumental *Annali dell'Islām*, Caetani's reconstruction largely followed Wellhausen's lead by adopting a preference for the Madīnan sources.[6] On the basis of the self-contained unit thesis, the source-critics devised a threefold method: (i) the assessment of each collection of traditions *in toto*, (ii) the juxtaposition and evaluation of the collections, and (iii) the determination of the relative value of one compilation over the other for the purposes of arriving at a synthetic history.[7]

For over half a century, the source-critics went unchallenged. The first serious critique was offered in 1971 by A. Noth who scrutinized Wellhausen's assumptions.[8] Noth determined that al-Ṭabarī's early sources did not individually represent unified conceptions of history. Since the early historians were primarily compilers, their works

preserved multiple reports from divergent, even antithetical perspectives.[9] Furthermore, since multiple biases and tendencies pervade the different collections, there is consequently no overarching outlook within each collection. As a result, a single collection cannot be considered to be a homogenous self-contained unit.[10] In other words, by attempting to locate stratified narrative layers, Wellhausen's theory of schools unintentionally masked the underlying heterogeneity inherent in the earliest source material.

After Noth's critique, scholars' attention shifted to the reliability of the early compilers as credible authorities. Sayf b. ‘Umar was front and center in this debate.[11] Whereas Wellhausen and the source-critics had once considered Sayf "unreliable" and his sources fictitious, subsequent scholars exculpated Sayf from these "charges" on "topographical" and "chronological grounds."[12] Meanwhile, Islāmic scholarship took another turn away from Wellhausen after scholars recognized the role played by ‘oral transmission’ in the earliest sources.[13] This tradition-critical school (N. Abbott, A.A. Duri, F. Rosenthal, and F. Sezgin) became primarily concerned with history as a literary process.[14] The orality thesis ‘undermined’ the assumption of an exclusive written transmission underpinning Wellhausen's documentary hypothesis.[15] As a result, skeptical scholars soon judged the transference and ‘application’ of biblical methods to Islāmic history to be untenable.[16]

Nevertheless, the utility of methods derived from biblical scholarship did not escape the attention of two historians. Taking their cue from critiques of the documentary hypothesis in biblical studies, A. Noth and L. Conrad introduced form-criticism into Islāmic studies. Premised on oral transmission, form-criticism sought to

evaluate a representative cross-section of all the sources.[17] In effect, Noth and Conrad's method proposed to excise and recompile a homogeneous body of source material on the basis of commonalities of (i) conceptions of history (*Themen*), (ii) forms (*Formen*), and (iii) biases (*Tendenzen*).[18] They argued that the order which emerges from the analysis of the form and content of these complexes of reports provides the means for assessing early Islāmic history.[19]

Ridda Criticism

Significantly, the study of the *ridda* – the so-called apostasy of the Arabs – commenced with Wellhausen's "Prolegomena." *Ridda* reports formed the basis of Wellhausen's critique of Sayf. Although Caetani followed suit, his studies contributed tremendously to standardizing the chronology of the *ridda*.[20] The results of Caetani's assiduous treatment of the *ridda* sources prepared the way for future research.[21] Unfortunately, however, Caetani's voluminous research was largely inaccessible, because it was published in Italian. Nonetheless, his findings made their way into C.H. Becker's general historical work published in 1913.[22] Then, after a four-decade hiatus, two *ridda* works came to light: (i) the collected fragments of Wathīma b. Mūsā's (d. 851 C.E.) early *ridda* treatise[23] and (ii) the assembled fragments of al-Balansī's (d. 1237 C.E.) *Ta'rīkh al-Ridda*.[24]

In 1973, E. Shoufani published his definitive monograph on the *ridda*.[25] Shoufani's work is exemplary not only in the sheer number of primary and secondary sources perused, but above all for the care and discernment with which these sources are sifted, evaluated, and integrated into a synthetic history of the *ridda* wars. Shoufani's approach to the sources is based upon the Tamīmī-bias thesis.[26] For example, Shoufani observes that al-Ṭabarī's chronography suffers from his heavy reliance on Sayf b.

'Umar.[27]   Shoufani even goes so far as to discount Sayf as a 'story-teller.'[28]

Nevertheless, given the fragmentary nature of the other extant sources, Shoufani

judiciously weighs Sayf's reports against those of other compilers.[29]   In fact, in certain

instances, Shoufani deems Sayf reliable, warding off any charges of fabrication.[30]

In the decades following Shoufani, the Jerusalem school published a number of

specific studies, represented principally by E. Landau-Tasseron,[31] M.J. Kister,[32] and M.

Lecker.[33]   In addition to these works, M.I. ul-Haq conducted a study focusing on *ridda*

poetry.[34]   During this period, two printed editions of Ibn Ḥubaysh's (d. 1188 C.E.) *Kitāb*

al-Ghazawāt – available to Caetani only in manuscript form – were published.[35]   Soon

afterward came the publication of three separate editions of al-Wāqidī's (d. 823 C.E.)

Kitāb al-Ridda, all based on the same unique manuscript.[36]   Thereafter, a damaged

manuscript of Sayf b. 'Umar's treatise was discovered. However, even though this work

is now published, its *ridda* portion remains lost.[37]   The study of the Banū Ḥanīfa and

Musaylima (d. 633 C.E.) also attracted the attention of researchers. M.J. Kister's copious

work collected a substantial body of source material on Musaylima.[38]   A. al-Askar's

research determined the social, political, geographic, and economic conditions in al-

Yamāma.[39]   Finally, A. Makin's application of critical theory (e.g., in his 're-reading' of

Musaylima's letter in light of J. Derrida and R. Barthes) reflects the 'literary turn' in

Islāmic historiography.[40]

Problems

Source Limits

Historians have at their disposal an abundance of narrative sources for early Islām. There

are however three shortcomings inherent in this extant literature. To begin with, the texts

are of late composition. In other words, there is a gap between the event and the recording of the event. For example, more than a century separates the death of the prophet Muḥammad b. ʿAbd Allāh (d. 632 C.E.) and the earliest hagiography (*sīra*) composed about his life. A further example is the literary account written about the so-called 'apostasy wars' (*ḥurūb al-ridda*) waged in Arabia roughly from 632 to 634 C.E. The earliest surviving manuscript on this subject is by the historian al-Wāqidī, whose death in 823 C.E. marks a two-century gap between the events of the 'apostasy' (*ridda*) and their commitment to writing. The second intrinsic problem of literary sources is the high loss of texts over time. For instance, of the nine or so known original *ridda* works, six are lost, two are fragmentary, and only one survives intact.[41] The greatest shortcoming of narrative sources by far, however, is the literary genre itself. Four problems stand out, which can be classed under the rubrics of memory and fallacy.

Memory

Memory is the past remembered, it is not the past itself.[42] Space and time intervene as barriers between the historian and past events. Not forgotten, the events of the *ridda* lived on in the collective memory of the ʿIrāqīs. Consider the *ridda* historian Sayf b. ʿUmar who, well over a century after the events unfolded, gathered *ridda* narratives that were circulating not in Arabia, but in ʿIrāq.[43] His clan, the Usayyid b. ʿAmr of Tamīm, settled with the Banū Ḥanīfa in the ʿIrāqī garrison town of al-Kūfa after they had yielded in the *ridda* wars.[44] Kept alive generation after generation through countless telling and retelling, the *ridda* narratives grounded the Kūfans' unique and independent identity, thereby temporarily safeguarding it from being overshadowed by a universalizing Umayyad and later ʿAbbāsid umbrella. Kūfan memory preserved indispensible facts

about the *ridda* that had been forgotten elsewhere, but nonetheless, it continually shaped and reshaped these facts to fit a particular mold of communal mnemohistory (historical memory). In fact, Sayf's history is a final testament bearing witness to this dying Kūfan tradition that shortly thereafter was subsumed by the emergent caliphal counter-order.

Counter-memory is a corollary to collective memory. Competing interests and perspectives, along with the changing composition of communities and the ceaseless imagining and reimagining of communal identities, give rise to counter-memory. In fact, the annals of Islāmic history abound with counter-memory in the form of contradictory reports. For instance, the *ridda* reports make no fewer than seven different counterclaims about who killed the 'rebel' leader Musaylima (d. 633 C.E.).[45] Whereas the Banū ʿĀmir b. Luʾayy clan of Quraysh claim that it was one of their own, the Banū Umayya clan of Quraysh counterclaim that it was no one less than Muʿāwiya, the founder of their dynasty, who slew him. A series of counterclaims coalesces into a counter-memory that defines a community's boundaries. The sustained communal transmission of this counter-memory, in turn, transforms it into a counterhistory.

There is no such thing as a stand-alone history. Each history, relative to other histories, is a counterhistory. The triumph of one counterhistory over all the others results in official history. Firmly set within a master narrative, official history retrojects its worldview onto the timeline. So in this case, this newly minted minority elite (Umayyads, ʿAbbāsids) projected back into history the origins of their legitimacy to rule over the majority. Therefore, official history assumes an ahistorical, timeless quality. Take for instance the earliest surviving version of Muḥammad's religious biography by Ibn Hishām (d. ca. 835 C.E.) that was based upon a redaction of Ibn Isḥāq's (d. ca. 761

C.E.) earlier work.[46]   Ibn Isḥāq had crystallized the collective memory of al-Madīna (Yathrib) – the city of the prophet – into a powerful counterhistory wrapped in the mantle of prophetic authority. As a *de facto* official history, Ibn Hishām's later version trumped all other communal memories of the past, eclipsing even the historical memory of al-Kūfa. This official history situates Muḥammad within the framework of salvation history. The pre-Islāmic period becomes the theatrical backdrop to Muḥammad's prophetic mission. Inaugurating the Islāmic phase in history, Muḥammad's prophethood takes center stage in the master narrative. Ultimately assuming extra-historical qualities such as infallibility (*'iṣma*), the person of Muḥammad consequently escapes historicization. That is, Muḥammad becomes larger than life, a 'figure of memory,' and not of history.[47]   Thus, as constructions of communal identity and alterity, these late narrative sources – set within emergent theological discourses of sacred history – reveal more about the milieux of their composition than they do about the history of early Islām.

Fallacy

Since narratives are finite constructions, historians select what to include and exclude in their final narrative report. The late composition of Islāmic literary sources makes them especially susceptible to fallacies of narration.[48]   Two fallacies predominate, namely, presentism and tunnel history. Regarding the first of these, later historians who perceive the historical timeline only through the lens of the present fall prey to the anachronistic fallacy of presentism. Akin to the problem of official history, presentism projects present-day concepts and categories back onto history. A noteworthy example is the reading of the so-called 'Constitution of al-Madīna,' otherwise known as the *umma* ('community') document. The text exhibits distinct semantic usages of the terms

'Muslims' and 'Mu'mins' ('believers'). However, Ibn Isḥāq and modern historians conflate these two terms. As a result, they commit the fallacy of presentism by retrojecting an eighth-century conception of the term 'Muslim' upon this seventh-century document. This fallacy is represented in the following tables (SEE TABLES 1.1 AND 1.2).[49] The first depicts an ideal series of times (ranging from the sixth to the tenth century) as well as historical events (E–M) that a tenth-century historian could potentially choose from to narrate the past. Committing the fallacy of presentism, the historian selects events exclusively from their tenth-century perspective. Accordingly, the historian's narrative account is uneven and tends to systematically neglect other events that seem ir-

TIME		EVENTS				
PAST	6th Century	E	F	G	H	I
	7th Century	F	G	H	I	J
	8th Century	G	H	I	J	K
	9th Century	H	I	J	K	L
PRESENT	10th Century	I	J	K	L	M

Table 1.1: Ideal Series

relevant from a present-day vantage point. The result is an obstructed view of the past, namely a historical blind spot.

TIME		EVENTS				
PAST	6th Century					I
	7th Century				I	J
	8th Century			I	J	K
	9th Century		I	J	K	L
PRESENT	10th Century	I	J	K	L	M

Table 1.2: Fallacy of Presentism

Taking a narrow, singular view of the past, late Islāmic historians are also prone to the fallacy of tunnel history (SEE TABLE 1.3). The genealogy of Muḥammad that comes at the beginning of Ibn Isḥāq's hagiography is a prime example.[50] A product of

contested memory, this genealogy traces Muḥammad's ancestry from his birth in the second half of the sixth century all the way back to the primordial Adam. Perpetrating the fallacy of tunnel history, the historian links the birth events of select mnemohistorical figures to the conception of a single individual. Therefore, the narrative account generated resembles a tunnel in time. Accordingly, a lack of empirical evidence, combined with the late provenance of textual sources, their high attrition rate, and their memory and fallacy shortcomings, together mark the source limits for narrating the history of early Islām.

TIME		EVENTS				
PAST	Genesis					I
	…				I	
	…			I		
	…		I			
	6th Century	I				
	7th Century					
	8th Century					
PRESENT	9th Century					
	10th Century					

Table 1.3: Fallacy of Tunnel History

Narrative Processes

Historians report their research findings in the form of narratives that have a beginning, a middle, and an end. Consequently, historians narrate events in a sequence that naturally progresses from one event to the next. However, they are not privy to all the facts, and even less do they share in knowledge of the causal relations governing events. Given their fragmentary knowledge, historians have frequent recourse to a pair of literary devices, topoi and schemata.[51] These devices nonetheless expose historical writing to a process of accretion, ultimately resulting in core displacement.

Devices

Topoi (sing.: topos) are transferable reoccurring literary stereotypes that derive from specific events. Once severed from these events, they become independent of their original context. Characteristic types of topoi include scene setting, naming, numbering, detailing, and arrangement. Narrators deploy these portable motifs in one literary environment after another.[52] As a result, topoi tend to reoccur in a variety of more or less plausible situations. In addition to enriching narratives, these literary fillers also serve a legitimizing function by advancing the interests of one group over another. For example, the aforementioned controversy over the identity of Musaylima's slayer reveals several tendencies and biases. The Umayyad counterclaim is especially instructive. 'Abd al-Malik, the Umayyad caliph, once queried as to who it was that struck the final blow against Musaylima.[53] According to an unnamed eyewitness from Musaylima's tribe, Mu'āwiya was not responsible for Musaylima's death. 'Abd al-Malik retorted, passing judgment in favor of his ancestor. The memory of Musaylima, including claims to his legitimacy and authority, was a controversial subject at 'Abd al-Malik's Damascene court, particularly at a time when 'Abd al-Malik's own tenuous hold on the caliphate was contested.[54] By using the topos of 'naming the slayer,' the caliph buttressed his own family claim, while simultaneously defaming and barring the rise of any possible counterclaimants to his throne. Therefore, history is generally perpetuated when it retains some relevance to the present.

Schemata (sing.: schema) are connectors that associate and link narrative units into a more or less coherent and meaningful sequence of events. Put differently, they move the narrative along. Schematic types include transitional rhetorical formulae (e.g., 'then,' 'and'), pseudo-causes (e.g., anecdotes, letters), pseudo-etymologies (e.g., of

proper names, toponyms), systematization (i.e., parallel modeling), and undifferentiated reports (i.e., a string of topoi fitted into an ideal narrative mold). The original corpus of historical facts about early Islām comprised a scattering of disparate atomic reports varying in length from a single sentence to a page. Historians employed schemata to combine and recombine these reports that were devoid of their original causal links. In other words, none of these historians were aware of the real causes behind the events they were narrating. For this reason, the principal function of schemata, as connectors, is to fill this explanatory vacuum.[55] The conquest of al-Yamāma, for example, marks a turning point in the *ridda*. The historian al-Balādhurī (d. ca. 892 C.E.), juxtaposing two atomic reports when narrating the surrender of al-Yamāma, ends the first report about Mujjāʿa's subterfuge with "O Mujjāʿa you deceived me!"[56] The second report begins, "And (*wa-*) the people of al-Yamāma converted to Islām, so the alms tax was exacted from them."[57] As clearly evidenced, these two atomic reports are only loosely linked by the coordinating conjunction *wa-* ('and' or 'but'). The reader is therefore left to assume that one event immediately followed the other. Any sense of temporal perspective is consequently lost; the result is a fallacy that correlates narrative continuity with causality.[58]

Developments

The centuries-old process of explaining early Islāmic events by means of topoi and schemata culminated in the voluminous Arabic historical tradition. However, early Islāmic historiography is not special in this regard. For instance, the Battle of Manzikert fought between the Byzantines and Seljuq Turks in 1071 C.E. underwent a similar process of accretion.[59] From the twelfth to the fifteenth century, the battle narrative became

transformed, taking on added features which included topoi (i.e., stock elements) and schematic pseudo-causes (e.g., anecdotes, documents). *Ridda* narratives also show evidence of accretion through time. For example, the execution narrative related about Musaylima's disciple, Ibn Nawwāḥa, experienced a similar growth from the eighth to the eleventh century C.E.[60] Identical eighth-century reports narrate Muḥammad's encounter with two unnamed messengers dispatched by Musaylima. A century later, another report relating the survival of Musaylima's movement recounts the persecution of his followers and the execution of their leader, Ibn Nawwāḥa. Furthermore, this early ninth-century report also combines the information provided in the eighth-century report by naming Ibn Nawwāḥa as one of the two originally unnamed messengers. At the end of the ninth century, the original version circulates together with a further, enlarged combined version, detailing Ibn Nawwāḥa's decapitation in the market square. In the tenth and early eleventh century, a total of six reports circulate, some of which preserve the original, while others name Ibn Uthāl as the second messenger.[61]

Accretion is not dependent on an original historical kernel; it can also arise from mnemohistorical polemic. Otherwise stated, a narrative motif can spawn another motif. A striking example from *ridda* literature is the meeting of Musaylima and his female 'rebel' counterpart, Sajāḥ.[62] At the height of the so-called 'apostasy wars,' al-'Ijlī (d. 641 C.E.) composed an invective poem graphically portraying Musaylima and Sajāḥ's purported debauchery.[63] Adaptations of these popular verses continued to circulate well into the ninth century. However, Sayf, the principal *ridda* source for al-Ṭabarī, does not narrate this lurid tale. In a fifteenth-century Tunisian handbook for attracting the fairer sex, there appears another explicit version of how Musaylima used perfume to seduce

Sajāḥ. Although separated by eight centuries, one fiction generated another, continuously adding to the incessantly growing corpus.

Accretion is not so much a deviation as a way of following the natural course of historical narration. Its aggregate effect, however, is core displacement. For instance, once an original atomic report generates a secondary report, it can independently generate further accretions, thereby making the original dispensable. Multiplied many times over, the original atomic report increasingly becomes relegated to the periphery. The center, as a result, slowly becomes populated with later generations of reports. The graph below depicts this diachronic process of core displacement (SEE GRAPH 1.1). As illustrated, once an original cluster of seventh-century atomic reports produces secondary narratives within the emergent discursive field of practicing historians, the original cluster slowly begins to move off-center. However, the original cluster still casts a shadow of its former self onto the central narrative. By the ninth century, however, both the 'shrinking' narrative core and its growing shadow have taken a back seat to newly-minted tertiary narratives.[64] Most dramatically, by the tenth century, the shrunken original core falls outside the purview of Islāmic discursive history; its overgrown shadow is now its only presence. This shadow represents an empty thematic vessel filled not with original atomic content, but rather with diluted topoi and schemata. Therefore, as a consequence of core displacement, historians reconstructing 'what actually happened' in early Islām must look beyond the center, that is, they must look to the margins of the Islāmic historical tradition.
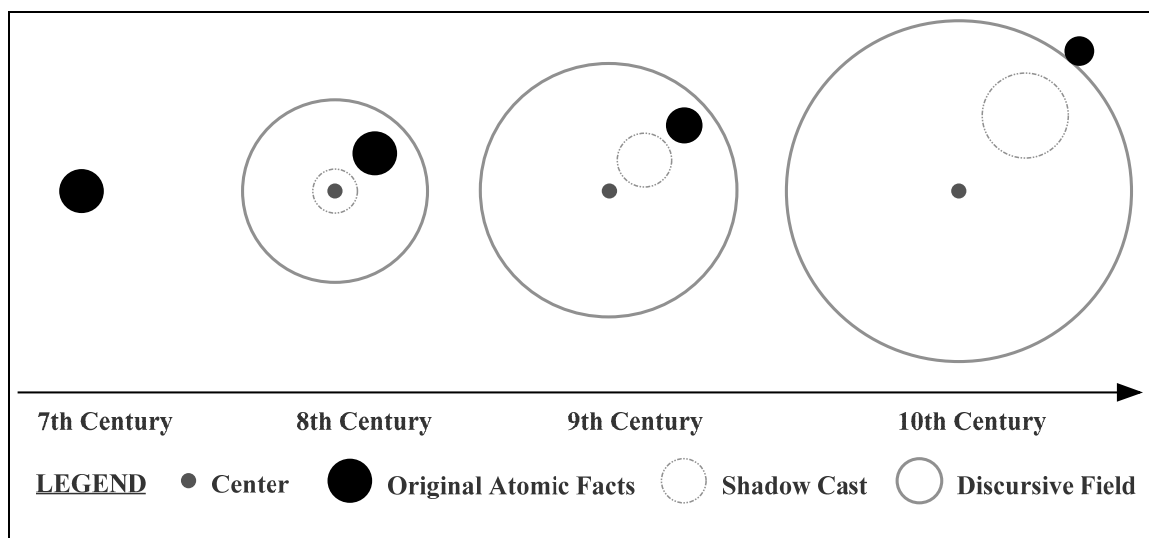
Graph 1.1: Core Displacement

Approach

Marginalities

The contextualization and historicization of Muḥammad and his movement are central issues for historians seeking to reconstruct the past. Modern historical research focuses on central events and reports about early Islām. For example, studies of Muḥammad's religious biography dwell on a series of eight motifs: (i) the Calling to Islām, (ii) the Exodus (*hijra*) from Makka to al-Madīna, (iii) the Battle of Badr, (iv) the Battle of Uḥud, (v) the Battle of the Trench, (vi) the Armistice of al-Ḥudaybiya, (vii) the Accusation against ʿĀʾisha, and (viii) the Conquest of Makka.[65] The earliest extant reports (e.g., the corpus of ʿUrwa b. al-Zubayr (d. 712 C.E.)) on Muḥammad's career are constrained by these same limitations. As critical nodes, these topoi form a matrix of commensurable mnemohistorical facts; the outcome is a structurally homogenous narrative cycle, or in other words, a hagiography.

This production of a smooth narrative is not limited to Muḥammad's career. Take for instance the early Islāmic conquests (*futūḥ*). These central events and reports are

similarly stylized. The ideal conquest campaign is for this reason reducible to a six-node narrative cycle: (i) the Appointment of the Campaign Leader, (ii) the Naming of a Companion of the Prophet as the Supreme Leader, (iii) the Issuance of the Caliph's Orders, (iv) the Victory Achieved through the Execution of the Caliph's Orders, (v) the Dispatch of the Caliph's Share of Spoils, and (vi) the Messenger's Interaction with the Caliph in al-Madīna.[66] In light of these considerations, historians approaching early Islām need a method for detection. The question is, how can historians breach the almost impenetrable spatiotemporal and conceptual barrier formed by this formidable body of late source material?

Method

Publishing in the last quarter of the nineteenth century, the Italian art historian Giovanni Morelli devised a method for discerning authentic paintings from forgeries.[67] In establishing the authenticity of a portrait painting, he determined that the key is not to focus on central features of the face (e.g., eyes). Invariably, forgers will pay special attention to these features. Moreover, the portrayal of these central features tends to be greatly influenced by the painter's school. Therefore, in order to establish whether a portrait is a forgery, the critic must assess marginal features that do not usually draw any suspicion (e.g., hands, ears). Look for instance at the vast range of ear portrayals by various Italian artists (SEE ILLUSTRATION 1.1).[68] By focusing on these types of marginal clues, Morelli's method uncovered new heterogeneous evidence. Combined with normative homogenous evidence, the Morellian method ultimately led to startling conclusions about the attribution of paintings held in galleries across Europe. Through the investigation of marginalities, he established a principle for sifting through both

pictorial and textual sources. Accordingly, historians must read against the grain. They must look at marginal – and not central – events and reports in the early Islāmic historical corpus. The study of textual marginalities emerges as the cornerstone of early Islāmic history.

| Fra Filippo. | Filippino. | Signorelli. | Bramantino. | Mantegna. | Giovanni Bellini. |
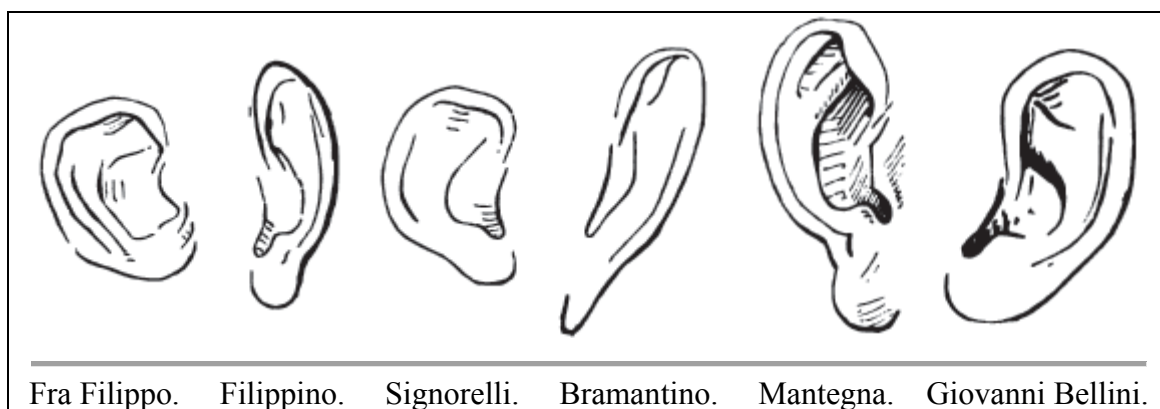
Illustration 1.1: Ear Portrayals

Textual Marginalities

Although there is a predilection for the homogenization of narratives, this process is never complete. Consequently, uneven elements (i.e., marginal reports and marginal events) persist within the generally leveled master narrative. Marginal reports contain tangential information found within larger narratives on central events, and do not fit naturally within the grand narrative informing these events. For example, shortly after Muḥammad commenced his public preaching, the Makkans lambasted him by saying, "We have heard that a man in al-Yamāma called al-Raḥmān teaches you. We will never believe in him."[69] This 'man from al-Yamāma' is traditionally equated with Musaylima, the central Arabian 'rebel' leader. Although Ibn Isḥāq attempts to smooth out this jagged report by embedding it within a Qur'ānic discourse (Q. 13:30), this report nonetheless juts out. Another marginal report is found in Ibn Hishām's notes on Muḥammad's

religious biography. He relates that Thumāma b. Uthāl al-Ḥanafī once openly defied the authority of the Makkan leader, Abū Sufyān. In spite of his transgression, one Makkan remarked, "Let him alone, for you have need of al-Yamāma for your food."[70] Thumāma accordingly departed from the city unharmed. Combining these two marginal reports, a larger question begins to emerge: What does Makka have to do with al-Yamāma?

Marginal events – the second type of textual marginality – are those that are not central to the mnemohistorical origins and development of the Islāmic community. For instance, whereas the *sīra* and *futūḥ* genres flourished through countless retellings, the *ridda* corpus – apart from a handful of works – was altogether forgotten and deleted from the collective memory of the Islāmic community. Moreover, the early compilers of *ridda* works (e.g., Sayf, al-Wāqidī) were in fact blacklisted by their contemporaries as well as by succeeding generations of scholars.[71] Yet modern topographical research has corroborated Sayf's *ridda* reports (e.g., his account of Khālid b. al-Walīd's military expedition against the 'apostates' at al-Buzākha).[72] In addition, although polemics and poetry often allude to figures such as 'Musaylima the Arch-Liar,' these are no more than literary topoi stripped of their actual historical referents. Consider the opening lines of al-Maʿarrī's (973-1058 C.E.) poetic invective launched against contemporary sectarians in which he equates dual topoi, Satan and Musaylima:

> Will you not fear God, O party of (one like) Musaylima,
> For you have gone astray in obedience to your lusts.
> Do not follow in the steps of Satan;
> How many of you are followers of footsteps![73]

Furthermore, preoccupied with stabilizing the chronology of the *maghāzī* (i.e., Muḥammad's campaigns and raids), classical chroniclers tended to neglect the *ridda*.[74] In consequence, the *ridda* corpus is less prone to schematization than the *sīra*/*maghāzī*

and *futūḥ*. Compared to the smooth narrative cycles of Muḥammad's hagiography and the early conquests, the *ridda* narratives go against the grain. For example, Sayf's *ridda* treatise is replete with idiosyncrasies in that the surviving narratives originate from tribal informants who are largely unaccounted for in later biographical (*ṭabaqāt*) literature.[75] Nor are these choppy *ridda* narratives stylized either in form or language. Some reports even evidence a confusion of language when they revert to the 'narrative present.'[76] This evidence points to the fact that what had once been historically central to early Islām became displaced to the historiographical periphery. It is here that historians must look to discover early Islāmic history. The *ridda* are the 'ears' of the Arabic historical corpus.

Ridda

Historians order information for the purpose of narrating history. They arrange available information into a number of thematic categories. Although these themes are governed by interests and concerns relevant to the historian's own day, they also reflect the autochthonous rubrics that once animated earlier historians.[77] In other words, these themes reflect what historians consider to be important and worthy of preservation.

Themes

Themes constitute the "…questions which preoccupied the early Islāmic transmitters of history."[78] Primary themes reflect an early layer of historians' thematic categories. Accretion over time results in the derivation of secondary themes; subsequently, tertiary themes ensue. The material core of the early Islāmic tradition is contained exclusively in primary themes. Although primary themes are not exempt from change over time, historians must mine these first-order themes in order to extract historical facts about early Islām. Among these, three contiguous primary themes dominate early Islāmic

historiography: *sīra – ridda – futūḥ*. Bridging the gap between the two crystallized themes of *sīra* and *futūḥ*, it is clear that *ridda* forms the nexus of this triad. Since *ridda* represents a genuine theme from which historians can reconstruct the oldest layers, the identification of three original *ridda* subsets is particularly significant. These generic themes are: tribal groups – tribal leader's deeds – great tribal battles. Reflecting dominant themes prevalent in the 'Battle-Days of the Arabs' (*ayyām al-ʿarab*) genre, these themes are of pre-Islāmic provenance.[79] Interestingly enough, the confluence of these themes generates the Islāmic sub-theme of *maghāzī* and the complex of sub-thematic rubrics: conquest of provinces – storming of cities – great conquest battles. Ultimately, it is from these pre-Islāmic themes that the primary Islāmic themes of *sīra*, *ridda*, and *futūḥ* emerge. In turn, this triad of primary themes generates the secondary and tertiary themes of early Islāmic historiography (SEE CHART 1.1).

Since secondary and tertiary themes are reconfigured and take on narrative accretions, these themes rarely preserve historical information. Secondary themes consist of dependent and independent types. Dependent secondary themes (i.e., court and central government; law and administration) stem from the convergence of the dual primary themes, *ridda* and *futūḥ*. On the other hand, independent secondary themes are introduced by medieval historians into the Islāmic historical craft. These include annalistic style, causal links, and *hijrī* dating (i.e., chronology based on Muḥammad's exodus from Makka to al-Madīna in 622 C.E.). Lastly, tertiary themes stem from secondary themes. For example, annalistic style gives rise to the arrangement of narratives according to caliphal reigns. The tertiary theme of caliphal entitlement is also noteworthy, as it ultimately derives from *ridda* and *futūḥ*.

'Apostasy'

As the earliest stratum of the Islāmic historical tradition, *ridda* is the entry point into the past. Waged in Arabia from roughly 632-634 C.E., the so-called 'apostasy wars' are chronologically positioned between two crucial sets of events in the annals of early Islāmic history, namely, the life of Muḥammad and the early Islāmic conquests. During the interim, several historiographical tendencies can be identified with partisan religio-political factions. Early counter-communities' interests in securing legitimacy meant a strong investment in the historical enterprise.[80] In particular, the issues of the succession (*khilāfa*) to Muḥammad, the Islāmic conquests, and the first civil war (*fitna*) gradually assumed a doctrinal character that molded historical fact to fit within particular modes of mnemohistorical understanding.

The official history of the *ridda* reads as follows: By the time the Messenger of God (*rasūl allāh*) passed away in western Arabia (al-Ḥijāz), the whole of the Arabian Peninsula had been converted to Islām. Just before that event, furthermore, in 'the Year of Delegations,' Arab chiefs made a beeline for al-Madīna to capitulate and enter into Islām. However, upon Muḥammad's death, a number of these chiefs apostatized. Among their number was the 'arch-apostate' Musaylima, the 'false prophet' of the Banū Ḥanīfa in central Arabia (Najd). Immediately following the 'apostasy,' Muḥammad's *de facto* successor, Abū Bakr, quelled the 'rebellions' and brought the 'apostates' into the fold once more. In quick succession, the unified Islāmic-Arab forces then dealt a debilitating blow to the Byzantine Empire, while simultaneously tolling the death knell for the Sāsānian Empire. The Islāmic conquests were accordingly deeds of God accomplished through the Arabs.[81]

Based on the surviving material, modern historians have reassessed crucial narrative elements dictating this official *ridda* account. For instance, they have called into question the degree of Muḥammad's hegemony and the extent to which the Arabs actually converted to Islām.[82] The trumped-up delegation narratives functioned to buttress Muḥammad's claims to sovereignty over those of the king of al-Yamāma, Hawdha b. ʿAlī (d. ca. 630 C.E.).[83] In fact, the tribal deputations that did arrive in al-Madīna were little more than disenfranchised minority groups trying to gain the upper hand against their rivals back home.[84] What is more, historians have systematically discerned four zones of Muḥammad's influence in Arabia.[85] According to this model, Muḥammad's degree of control decreased from center to periphery. The tribes in immediate proximity to Makka and al-Madīna were both politically and religiously Islāmicized. However, those in the fourth zone (e.g., the Banū Ḥanīfa in al-Yamāma) were independent of him. Therefore, it is clear that 'apostasy' (*ridda*) is a religiously charged label applied by Madīnan historians to the independent Banū Ḥanīfa who never collectively embraced Islām.[86] As a matter of fact, a series of concentric zones of influence also radiated from al-Yamāma (SEE MAP 2.1). So in effect, towards the end of Muḥammad's life, there were two competing spheres of influence, 'two Arabias': central Arabia and western Arabia.[87]

The primary theme of *ridda* originated from the insurmountable difficultly faced by Islāmic historians, lacking, as they did, any recourse to the original causal links. Committing the fallacy of presentism, these later historians worked under the assumption that Muḥammad was indeed the hegemon of Arabia. It follows that their narrative needed to account for the large number of inexplicable campaigns that were waged in

Arabia following his death. Consequently, the theme of *ridda* emerged because of its unifying explanatory power.[88] That is, it was necessary for there to have been 'apostasy wars' in order to quell the 'rebellion' against Islām and the challenge it posed to the heirs to Muḥammad's universal authority. Seeing that Abū Bakr adopted the same belligerent measures against all the 'rebels,' these historians focused on narrating a single grand 'apostasy' war fought after Muḥammad's death. Because the heterogeneous causes and motivations behind these counter-movements had become lost to view, the *ridda* became homogenized as a result.[89]

Once introduced, *ridda* developed accretions within the secondary theme of law and administration. Plagued by the problem of civil wars, medieval jurists had the question of defining an 'apostate' at the forefront of their minds. They categorized apostates into two classes: (i) those who deny the Muslim creed (*shahāda*), namely witnessing the unity of God and Muḥammad's apostleship, and (ii) those who refuse the payment of tithes.[90] This twofold classification reflects the religious motivation of the jurists. As a result of this religious tendency, tribes that had never converted to Islām at all became subsumed under one of these categories. In fact, the motivation behind this ahistorical classification was to establish the legality of the so-called 'apostasy wars' waged by Abū Bakr. In turn, this retroactive justification for Abū Bakr's acts of war established an authoritative legal precedent for waging a just war against insurgents. To meet their own legal needs, jurists such as al-Shāfiʿī (767-820 C.E.) thus reshaped Islām's early history.

Pre-Islāmic Themes	Tribal Groups	Tribal Leader's Deeds	Great Tribal Battles

Battle-Days of the Arabs

Proto-Islāmic Theme

Musaylima

Sub-Themes

Maghāzī

Conquest of Provinces — Storming of Cities — Great Conquest Battles

Primary Themes

Sīra — *Ridda* — *Futūḥ*

Secondary Themes

Annalistic Style — Court and Central Government — Law and Administration — *Hijrī* Dating — Causal Links

Tertiary Themes

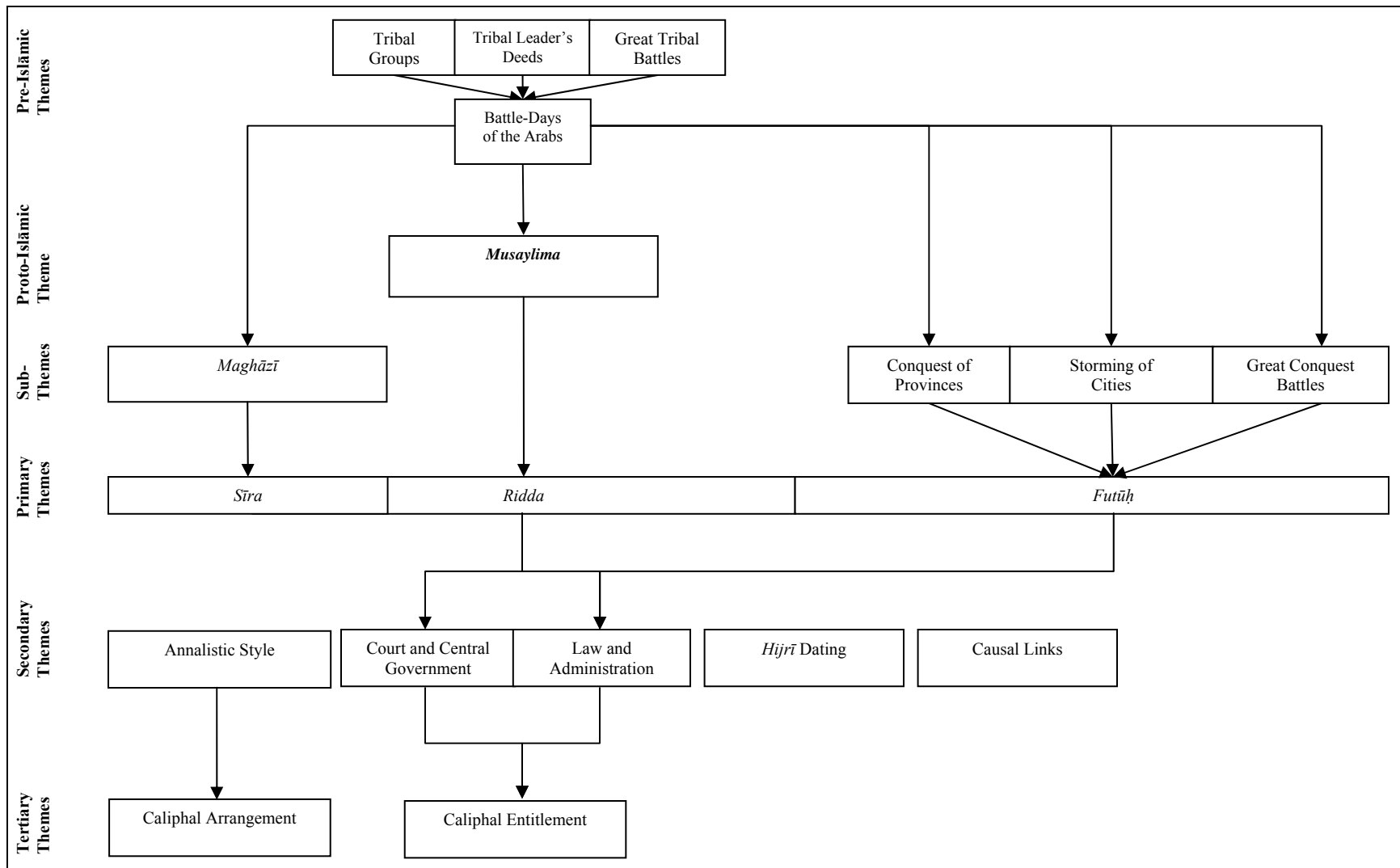Caliphal Arrangement — Caliphal Entitlement

Chart 1.1: Themes of Early Islāmic Historiography

These mnemohistorical and mnemolegal sources make evident the fact that the theme of *ridda* in no way bypassed the process of tendential doctrinization. However, as a result of core displacement, the schematization of *ridda* reports was considerably mitigated. Moreover, the amount of *ridda* material suppressed is less astonishing than the sheer amount preserved.[91] Although these marginal reports are by no means neutral, nonetheless, *ridda* as a marginal event poses fewer difficulties for historical reconstruction. It is here, accordingly, that historians must look in order to begin to discover early Islām. Once again, the *ridda* are the 'ears' of the Islāmic historical corpus. But then, what the *ridda* actually constitutes is another question altogether.

Proto-Islām

Periodization

Historians divide chronology into time periods amenable to analysis. Two types of periodization, namely, intuitive and analytic, demarcate the chronological boundaries of a historical phenomenon under consideration.[92] However, both of these types suffer from the same difficulty of ascertaining a dividing criterion. In other words, what determines when one period ends and another begins? A number of conceptual problems arise from separating one period from another. As a result, historians must rethink how they divide history.

Intuitive Periodization

Historical actors use intuitive periodization to make sense of their own communal history. Conscious of their founder's role in history, these native historians primarily concern themselves with self-identification. They split history into pre- and post-communal stages. The dividing line is the moment at which their community is founded.

For example, intuitive periodization segments Islāmic history into two periods: Ignorance (*jāhiliyya*) and Islām. Originally more of a moral judgment than a chronological determination, this intuitive periodization contrasts polytheism and monotheism, that is, unbelief juxtaposed with belief. Consequently, problems of framing and structure stem from this type of periodization.[93]

Couched in moral terms, the Ignorance–Islām divide determines how history is to be narrated. Historical agents of change take a backseat to moral causal factors. To elaborate, history moves forward not because of natural and human action, but rather because of an internal moral logic. Above all, history marches towards salvation. Structuring history around deliverance, intuitive periodization is prone to the fallacy of teleology. Just as an acorn becomes an oak tree, native historians see in the beginning of time the seed of salvation. In fact, native Islāmic historians (e.g., Ibn Isḥāq) see primeval monotheism in the mnemohistorical Abraham who was a 'pure monotheist' (*ḥanīf*).[94] Open to all the vagaries of time, this pristine monotheism became corrupt when idolatry and apostasy reared their ugly heads. Muḥammad then restored monotheism, and by setting the course of history right, he became its focal point. His 'community' (*umma*) is therefore the community of salvation. Because the acorn prefigures the tree, native periodization distorts the historical development of early Islām. Take for instance the portrayal of religion in the so-called 'age of ignorance.' Later native historians cast west and central Arabian religion as debased idolatry, a moral low point characterized by sex and violence. However, the Qur'ān portrays religion in western and central Arabia as a nondenominational monotheism.[95] This contemporary document reveals a missing link in the origins and development of Islām.

Analytic Periodization

When historical actors intuitively divide periods, historians must take this division into account with a grain of salt. To divide history, modern historians use analytic periodization. This can be either data derived (i.e., inductive) or theory based (i.e., deductive). Inductive periodization is determined by sifting through relevant historical facts. At times, its results can be counterintuitive.[96] For example, historical actors may not be aware of significant long-term changes affecting their times. Consider the slow but steady growth of Arab migration and settlement on the imperial borders before the Islāmic conquests.[97] Although this major demographic shift played a significant role in the conquests, it is more often than not passed over in silence. In addition, living in the present, a historical actor's gaze fixes on that particular moment, losing sight of all others. In the case of early Islām, the lightning-fast foreign conquests captured the attention of contemporaries, whereas domestic unrest went largely unnoticed. On the other hand, deductive periodization is based on a dominant theoretical criterion. For instance, political historians divide Islāmic history according to dynasties, most notably, the Umayyad and ʿAbbāsid. However, ordering history on the basis of one factor of change neglects other factors such as religion and economics.[98]

False Periodization

When historians fail to divide chronology along lines conforming to the historical phenomenon investigated, 'false periodization' results.[99] Historians of early Islām face this serious and insidious problem. Relabeled pre-Islām and Islām, modern historians embraced the Ignorance–Islām division as their deductive model. They expanded the geographic limits of pre-Islāmic Arabia to include South Arabia. In addition, by taking

into account the Nabateans, they extended pre-Islāmic chronology to cover ancient Arabia.[100]   However, by adopting this dichotomous intuitive model, they inadvertently inherited its biases and fallacies. Specifically, the temporal split between pre-Islām and Islām creates a false dichotomy. This generates an either-or fallacy. Everything – historical or thematic – must come *either* before *or* after Muḥammad. There is nothing in between. Any continuity between these allegedly incommensurable periods is reduced and homogenized. For example, in the portrayal of Arabian religion, this either-or periodization obfuscates the all-important development of a nondenominational monotheism in Arabia. Therefore, the pre-Islām–Islām periodization is fallacious. In fact, this official periodization masks a third intermediate category: proto-Islām. As a temporal category straddling the pre-Islāmic and Islāmic periods, proto-Islām offers a fresh perspective on the development of early Islām. The result is a new tripartite periodization: pre-Islām – proto-Islām – classical Islām.

Proto-Islāmic History

Proto-Islām accounts for seemingly inexplicable events in western and central Arabia. Consider the historical and mnemohistorical presence of Musaylima in the Islāmic historical tradition.[101] Muḥammad's hagiography clearly indicates that Musaylima the man and 'Musaylima the Arch-Liar' are present both *before* and *after* Muḥammad. Pertaining to the period prior to Muḥammad's birth, another source attributes the eponymous title 'Raḥmān' to Musaylima.[102] From this it appears that knowledge of Musaylima's preaching circulated among the Makkans. On one occasion, Muḥammad recited the opening phrase: 'In the Name of the Merciful and Compassionate God' (*bismillāh al-raḥmān al-raḥīm*). The Makkans mocked him because they interpreted this

to mean, 'In the Name of the Merciful God, al-Raḥmān.'[103]   At another time, the perplexed Makkans sent a delegation to al-Madīna to inquire about Muḥammad's preaching. They related that "He [Muḥammad] has claimed that he is the Messenger of al-Raḥmān. Indeed, the only al-Raḥmān we know is the one of al-Yamāma."[104] Another report preserved in Muḥammad's religious biography relates that after losing his tribe's protection, he appealed directly to the Banū Ḥanīfa nomads for assistance. They rejected his appeal outright. After his exodus (*hijra*) to al-Madīna, he reviled Musaylima by calling him 'the liar.'[105]   Other sources preserve fragments of a lively correspondence between the two leaders and also narrate their meeting in al-Madīna. Lastly, reports attest that only after Muḥammad's death did Musaylima meet his end in the so-called 'apostasy wars.' As a matter of fact, Musaylima's legacy lived on well into the early modern era.[106] These reports unequivocally situate Musaylima and his movement *before* and *after* Muḥammad.

However, all historians of early Islām share a common assumption. Following native Islāmic historians, modern historians equate the historical *ridda* wars with the *ridda* theme. As a result, *ridda* research is limited exclusively to the period *after* the death of Muḥammad, that is from 632 to 634 C.E. Their research never goes beyond what the Islāmic historical tradition designates as 'apostasy' (*ridda*). Yet the phenomenon of *ridda* chronologically extends well beyond the scope of both the *ridda* theme and the historical *ridda* wars. In fact, the *ridda* phenomenon commences well before Muḥammad and continues well after him. This continuity that spanned the pre-Islāmic and Islāmic periods was previously concealed under the dominant periodization. Similar to the phenomenon of an Arabian nondenominational monotheism, the *ridda* phenomenon falls

neatly within the proto-Islāmic period. From this it is clear that historians must escape the baited trap of native Islāmic historical and thematic categories of 'apostasy.' They must look to proto-Islāmic history in order to reconstruct early Islām.

<u>Subject</u>

Periodization and its subject matter are interlinked. Originally, the placement of the fourth and final *ridda* subtheme of Musaylima was problematic. It could only be regarded as *either* pre-Islāmic *or* Islāmic. Accordingly, historians overshadowed the Musaylima subtheme under the Islāmic thematic umbrella. However, moving beyond 'apostasy,' historians must now place Musaylima under the proto-Islāmic category. Therefore, the historical and thematic figure of Musaylima emerges as the subject of proto-Islāmic history (SEE CHART 1.1). Yet official historians (e.g., Ibn Isḥāq, Ibn Ḥubaysh) have through the ages typecast Musaylima in the villainous role of heretic. Furthermore, when these historians recast him in a pseudo-prophetic role, they do so only for comedic effect. On the other hand, Sayf, the Kūfan counterhistorian, casts him in a positive light as a hero, saint, and martyr. Sifting through this heresiographical and hagiographical debris, the problem of writing a history of Musaylima comes to the fore.

Heresiography

History is written by the victors, and so too are works on heresy.[107] Demonizing the enemy, heresiographies are not historical texts. Rather, they are functional and performative in nature. They function to define the 'sameness' that binds together orthodox communal identity against the 'otherness' of heterodoxy. As performative texts, they forge this identity by reenacting their founder's mnemohistorical drama against an artificial foil. Contrasted with the protagonist, the Musaylima foil serves to

emphasize Muḥammad's prophetic credentials. Beauty and truth go hand in hand. Whereas Musaylima is described as pale and thin, Muḥammad shines as the epitome of beauty.[108] Roots and truth also stand side by side. While Muḥammad's universal family tree is the centerpiece of genealogical works, Musaylima's languishes in the corner.[109] Cast as the imposter-prophet, Musaylima provides comic relief. Mimicking Muḥammad, his miracles go hilariously haywire. When Musaylima strokes the head of a newborn, the child goes bald.[110] If Muḥammad blesses a freshly dug well, sweet water sprouts forth.[111] But when Musaylima blesses a well, it dries up.[112] Even Musaylima's revelations are made into Qur'ānic parodies. The most famous of these verses reads: "O immaculate frog, neither do you refuse drink, nor do you muddy the water."[113] Once decontextualized, these lines were no doubt cited to extol Muḥammad's virtues at Musaylima's expense.

Typecast as the impostor, Musaylima is libeled by official heresiographers. In fact, the name Musaylima is in itself a diminutive of Maslama, a variant form of his given name, Aslam.[114] As a *ridda* diminutive, it corresponds to a group of such belittling names which include Ṭulayḥa (Ṭalḥa), Ukaydir (Akdar), and most notably, Abū Hurayra (a one-time governor recalled from al-Yamāma).[115] Musaylima's title is also revealing. Unceremoniously dubbed 'the Arch-Liar' (*al-kadhdhāb*), this epithet ostensibly contrasts with Muḥammad's designation, al-Amīn ('the Trustworthy').[116] Although hagiographers relate an anecdote to support the pseudo-etymology of Muḥammad's title, it is nevertheless evident that al-Amīn was his given name (*ism*), not his title.[117] The actual contrapositive to al-Kadhdhāb ('the Mendacious') is al-Ṣiddīq ('the Veracious'). This is the title of none other than Abū Bakr, de facto successor to Muḥammad and victor of the

so-called 'apostasy wars.' Hagiographers also deploy a literary scheme to mask this trail

by using pseudo-etymologies to narrate various contradictory occasions on which Abū

Bakr was supposedly given this title.[118] Despite these efforts, the essential historical

tension between 'the Mendacious' and 'the Veracious,' that is, between Musaylima and

Abū Bakr remains.

Although heresiography resorts to these kinds of caricature, ridicule, and name-

calling, these polemics nevertheless reveal a real power struggle between early counter-

communities and their competing histories.[119] Official heresiography attempts to

subsume them all under the single rubric of 'apostasy.' As the transmitter of many *ridda*

reports, Abū Hurayra relates this prophetic tradition: "The hour will not come until thirty

antichrists come forth, each of them claiming to be a prophet."[120] Given the

eschatological character implicit in salvation history, Islāmic historians hurriedly

attempted to account for these thirty false prophets. They lumped together into this

numerical topos divergent religious and secular 'rebel' leaders who were now recast as

false prophets. Non-religious movements such as Umm Ziml's also fell prey to this

rubric of 'apostasy.' In effect, Islāmic historians of heresy created a false milieu: the

ridda.

Hagiography

As opposed to the abundance of writing on heresy, hagiographical fragments on

Musaylima are limited. Hagiography is characterized by the same functional and

performative qualities as heresiography. In contrast, hagiography seeks to sacralize

rather than demonize its subject. As a subtle form of political apologetic, it tends to rely

heavily on subtext. In other words, explicit themes remain unexpressed on the surface

level. By focusing on specific events or doctrines promulgated by the founding hero-saint, hagiography reveals the community's deep-seated identity. For example, the manner of a hero-saint's death is especially significant.[121] In the case of Kūfan counter-history, Sayf twice narrates Musaylima's last words: "Fight for your noble descent!"[122] Elsewhere, it is reported that Musaylima and his followers fought and fell like lions in 'the Oasis of Death' (*ḥadīqat al-mawt*).[123] Here, Musaylima is immortalized as a martyr.[124] Consequently, he embodies the heroism (*muruwwa*) which is the highest virtue of tribal ethos. Especially noteworthy is Sayf's account of Musaylima's death. As Khālid inspects the corpses, Sayf's narrative identifies the body of Musaylima's right-hand man, but fails to identify the corpse of the 'deathless' hero-saint.[125] Therefore, al-Ṭabarī – who preserves his own reworking of Sayf – needs to resort to another authority to make a positive identification of Musaylima's small and pale remains.[126] A further indicator of Musaylima's elevated status is his age. He is reported to have died at the ripe age of a hundred and fifty.[127] As a hagiographical embellishment, this emphasizes the hero's near immortality.

Hagiographical fragments on Musaylima also highlight his teachings.[128] In fact, his proto-Islām has an uncanny resemblance to that of Muḥammad's. In stark contrast to the pre-Islāmic age of ignorance, these hagiographical materials clearly indicate that Musaylima's proto-Islām regulated sex (i.e., unless for procreation) and violence (e.g., female infanticide). Characterized as a monotheist and ascetic, Musaylima enjoins prayers, fasting, and abstention from sins of the flesh. He calls for recognition of the one God, al-Raḥmān. In addition, his doctrines recognize a Day of Reckoning and a Kingdom of Heaven. Other verses are also preserved. Notable are the talismanic lines in

defense and praise of Sayf's ancestral tribe. Musaylima once said that "Banū Tamīm is a tribe of purity, an independent tribe with nothing reprehensible about them and [who pay] no tribute [to anyone]; let us be allies of protection with them in goodness as long as we live, let us protect them from every person, then when we die their fate will be to the Merciful One (*al-Raḥmān*)."[129]

Historiography

As mentioned above, official Islāmic historians attempted to place Musaylima *after* Muḥammad, intentionally placing the cause *after* the effect. In order to accommodate this official interpretation of history, these historians fashioned a false milieu of 'apostasy.' Musaylima, among others, became an imposter, i.e., an imitator mimicking Muḥammad. Nevertheless, once this false milieu is cast aside, the question of contextualizing Musaylima and Muḥammad remains. Some historians, on the other hand, have argued that since both preachers employed the same religious institutions (e.g., the caller to prayer: *mu'adhdhin*), these institutions must have emerged from a shared prototype. They maintain that 'analogous effects must originate from analogous causes.'[130] The cumulative effect of such shared prototypes is a shared milieu. They also contend that Musaylima and Muḥammad were independent products of their environment. One preacher was not dependent upon the other, nor were their respective movements. However, a milieu can only delimit the coordinate plane in which a discourse is generated; it cannot generate the discourse itself. Put differently, there is a serious problem of agency in the development of early Islām. Only historical actors could have set proto-Islām into motion. It could not have given rise to itself. The unmistakable resemblance of the teachings and institutions of the two preachers points to

either a primacy of one over the other or a codependency. Given Muḥammad's late arrival on the scene, Musaylima's primacy necessarily follows. Therefore, Musaylima – from this point forward Aslam – is the subject of proto-Islāmic history. Narrating the life and times of Aslam proves to be another problem altogether.

Narrative Reconstruction

<u>Function of a Narrative</u>

History is the past described, it is not the past itself. Otherwise stated, history is historiography.[131] Historical writing is the representation of past events in a nonfictional narrative format. Since history is told through the perspective of time, its narrative development is linear; it begins at the beginning and ends at the end. The narrative form of history performs several functions.[132] First, it serves a heuristic purpose by aiding historians in processing and comprehending the past. Next, it gives order to the description of past events. Lastly, it serves a restorative function. Historians use the structure inherent in narrative to repair and restore damaged histories. The cumulative effect of narrative is history. When historical facts are plugged into a narrative template, otherwise unseen and unaccounted for historical facts are forced to the fore. These new facts are then ordered and synthesized with the old to forge a new narrative. The result is the recovery of the past. For this reason, the fractured historical record of proto-Islām ideally lends itself to narrative reconstruction. Framing and filling are two stages of this reconstruction.[133]

Framing

Disparate and often putatively contradictory facts about the past are ordered by narrative parameters. A three-tier principle governs the narration of proto-Islāmic history: (i)

frameworks, (ii) levels, and (iii) factors. Proto-Islām's linear *framework* progresses in three developmental phases: early, middle, and late proto-Islām. This framework reflects the major turning points in history. For example, early proto-Islām begins by tracing the emergence of the Banū Ḥanīfa as the protector of central Arabia. After sketching the rise of Aslam, early proto-Islām ends with the Banū Ḥanīfa's hegemony over Arabian commerce. Middle proto-Islām, on the other hand, begins with the mobilization of Muḥammad's reform movement in western Arabia and ends with his triumph there. Late proto-Islām then follows the confrontation of these two leaders and these two Arabias. Lastly, the new order established by Abū Bakr constitutes the post-development of classical Islām.

Two *levels* of interaction are at work in proto-Islāmic Arabia (i.e., local and regional). The narrative of proto-Islām follows developments at both levels, and the ways in which one of these affects the other. The main local levels include al-Yamāma in central Arabia (Najd) and Makka in western Arabia (al-Ḥijāz). These two local levels interact to form a trans-Arabian sphere of action. There are also three operative ethno-historical *factors* in proto-Islām, i.e., contexts, agents, and shifts. Contexts are the societal, environmental, ideological, and human surroundings in which historical agents act. Existing at the local and regional levels, contexts are the setting and backdrop of their times. Embedded within these contexts are the agents who play their role in history. The two principal proto-Islāmic agents are Aslam and Muḥammad (from this point forward Amīn) whose actions bring about changes that ultimately reconfigure contextual conditions at play. These historical agents' actions cause ripples in society at the local and regional levels, in turn, shifting the course of human history. For instance, the

creation of a regional economic hegemony by the Yamāmī leader Hawdha had far-reaching consequences. Most notably, it gave rise to a local opposition movement resisting this centripetal force. Subsequently, this local effect itself became a cause which gave rise to the Makkan preacher Amīn. Eventually, Amīn and his opposition movement put an end to Hawdha's regional order, supplanting it with their own.

Filling

Once the frame sets the narrative parameters, this area is then populated with available descriptive facts and sequences of events. The result is a punctured narrative shot full of holes. These interpretive "gaps" range in size from small to large. Filling is therefore the next stage of narrative reconstruction. Interpretive fillers comprise: (i) logical fillers, (ii) replacements, and (iii) bridges. *Logical fillers* are inferences used to repair micro fissures. For example, when the temporal sequence of events is uncertain, historians extrapolate relative chronologies based upon available data. For instance, the number of events transpiring between the battles at al-Buzākha and 'the Oasis of Death' indicate an interval that spanned at least two months. Given that Khālid arrived at al-Buzākha (in central Najd) at the end of October 632 C.E., it follows that the Banū Ḥanīfa were defeated at al-Yamāma (in eastern Najd) around January 633 C.E.[134] Once computed, this relative chronology is used as a logical filler to provide time perspective in the narrative.

Replacements fill in midsize gaps left when literary devices have been excised from the narrative. For example, pseudo-causes originally served as historical place holders. Once removed, they are replaced with descriptive content. Take for instance Aslam's inverted miracles. After the inversion is corrected, the miracles remain. Although Aslam is made the direct causal agent of the swelling of sweet water in the

wells, the fertility of the land, and the good health of the children, these nevertheless point to the prosperity of al-Yamāma. This is corroborated by its agricultural productivity. The area produced an abundance of dates, barely, and wheat.[135] In fact, al-Yamāma exported its surplus grain as far as Makka (known as 'the valley without cultivation') whose barren land made its inhabitants dependent upon grain arriving from al-Yamāma for survival.[136] In short, Aslam's miracles indicate that al-Yamāma was teeming with life. Furthermore, the prosperity of the place was tied to his social and legal reforms.

Bridges are the third and final fillers that hold together two historical phenomena when no causal link is directly given in the sources. Consider, for example, a central historical problem concerning Amīn's military career. Soon after his exodus from Makka to al-Madīna, Amīn launched a series of military campaigns throughout the Arabian Peninsula. The objective of his first failed campaign was to secure Dūmat al-Jandal, a remote north Arabian trading outpost. A prolonged phenomenon, totaling no fewer than eighty campaigns with no apparent pattern, followed in the wake of this battle. The sources are silent on the military strategy informing Amīn's opening gambit here, as well as his successive campaigns. It follows that this phenomenon is 'poorly understood' by historians.[137] However, there exists another phenomenon that can shed light on this matter. Amīn's rival, Hawdha, monopolized an extensive trans-Arabian trade network which bypassed both Makka and al-Madīna in western Arabia.[138] Originating in Dūmat al-Jandal, this network spiraled throughout the peninsula, ultimately funneling its goods into Hawdha's capital, al-Yamāma (SEE MAP 2.2). Amīn's campaigns sought to reroute the flow of goods from central to western Arabia. As a result, a one-to-one

correspondence emerges between Amīn's military objectives and Hawdha's trade network. Therefore, this filler bridges a large gap in the narrative.

Since gaps in a severely damaged historical narrative can rarely, if ever, be reconstructed without resorting to new interpretive materials, it is no surprise that these new materials closely resemble the old. For example, in reconstructing the foundations of a brick building, a mason skillfully chisels the older damaged bricks and replaces them with new, stronger ones of the same shape and size. Strikingly similar in technique, fillers resemble literary devices. Nonetheless, as explanatory strategies, interpretive fillers are indispensible tools in the historian's kit. Since interpretation and description are joined at the hip, historians need a critical method for filling and fleshing out narrative reconstruction.

Comparative Method

To systematically fill the gaps in the historical record, historians use the comparative method. This method compares discrete facts that constitute concrete phenomena in order to extrapolate shared patterns. Comparison is only feasible if two sets of phenomena already share a number of characteristics (SEE TABLE 1.4). Take for example the following three sets:

SET 1	SET 2	SET 3
A	C	B
B	D	C
C	E	D
D	F	E
E	G	F

Table 1.4: Comparative Method

Each set consists of five elements. A comparison of Sets 1 and 2 yields three shared elements (**C**, **D**, **E**). As a generic set, the comparative type (SEE TABLE 1.5) plugs in these

GENERIC SET
C
D
E
X
Y

Table 1.5: Comparative Type

three common elements and adds two further variables (**X**, **Y**) in order to account for those features not shared by the above two sets (**A**, **B** and **F**, **G**). This generic comparative type is comprehensive as it anticipates further comparable phenomena, including Set 3 (SEE TABLE 1.4).

Classes

There are two classes of comparative types: historical and interdisciplinary.[139] The distinction revolves around whether the data used to extrapolate a comparative type is strictly based upon historical facts, or upon a cross-section of different fields such as sociology and anthropology. Irrespective of this distinction, the three-stage construction of both types is the same. Whereas the first analytic stage determines sets of atomic facts, the second stage compares them. In the third stage, their shared features are then synthesized into a comparative type. Although the construction of comparative types is similar, their compatibility differs. Since the historical class is narrow in construction, its application is generally limited to the field of history. Conversely, the interdisciplinary class is broad in construction and therefore cross-compatible. Accordingly, historians have at their disposal both classes of comparative types.

Applications

The comparative method is a powerful tool for restoring historical narratives. This method is key for reconstructing ethno-historical factors such as agents, contexts, and shifts. For example, a comprehensive account of proto-Islām entails reconstructing the power roles that historical agents assumed in Arabia. However, the surviving facts are few and far between. Historians nonetheless use the comparative method to identify three ideal types of legitimate authority: (i) traditional authority, (ii) charismatic authority, and (iii) rational-legal authority.[140] Based upon custom, *traditional authority* is exemplified by the tribal chief. *Charismatic authority*, on the other hand, takes either a political or demagogic form. Political charisma is grounded in the person and heroic deeds of the conqueror. Demagogic charisma, in contrast, is epitomized by public orators such as the poet and preacher. Lastly, *rational-legal authority* is vouchsafed through the codification and enforcement of law. All these types of legitimacy are not mutually exclusive, since historically they exist as "variants," 'transitional' forms, and syntheses.[141] In addition, multiple types of authority can be present simultaneously, one reinforcing the other; and, at times, these form a diachronic continuum of legitimation. By comparing these patterned types to extant historical facts, historians can systematically reconstruct the structure of power in Arabia. In fact, surviving information indicates not only shifts in legitimation styles, but also the emergence of another discourse that combines the charismatic and traditional types, namely, religious legitimacy.

The application of the comparative method also extends to reconstructing historical contexts. For instance, there exist two dominant forms of social and environmental adaptation in Arabia (i.e., nomadism and sedentary society). Some

historians have long considered these juxtaposed sectors to reflect a social bifurcation, therefore assuming a consequent friction between them. As a result, they have used the nomadic-sedentary divide to account for a wide variety of historical phenomena extending from the rise of al-Madīna to the Arab conquest of the Middle East.[142] Comparative studies in human geography, however, demonstrate that this division does not constitute a static boundary between the two sectors of society. In fact, both of these social forms are among a range of interdependent organizational types that make up the continuum of Arab society. The insights garnered and gained from the comparative method make possible the reconstruction of the relationship between nomadism and sedentary life in late antique Arabia.

Lastly, comparative research contributes considerably to the reconstruction of historical shifts in Arabia. Take for example the dual processes of detribalization and retribalization. Reflecting the fluidity of social modes of adaptation, these twin processual types account for how decentralized tribes become transformed into centralized states, and vice versa. These processes therefore allow for the reconstruction of the sociological factors behind the transformation of the Banū Ḥanīfa into a major sedentary power centered in al-Yamāma during the early proto-Islāmic period. In sum, the judicious application of the comparative method as a critical filling technique results in the rich narrative reconstruction of proto-Islāmic history.

[1] Julius Wellhausen, "Prolegomena zur ältesten Geschichte des Islams," in *Skizzen und Vorarbeiten*, vol. 6 (Berlin: Georg Reimer, 1899): 1-160.

[2] al-Ṭabarī, *Ta'rīkh al-Rusul wa al-Mulūk*, 15 vols., eds. Michael Jan de Goeje et al. (Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1879-1901).

[3] Wellhausen, "Prolegomena," 3; For Ibn al-Athīr's dependence on al-Ṭabarī, see Fred M. Donner, "Translator's Forward," in al-Ṭabarī, *The Conquest of Arabia*, vol. 10, trans. Fred M. Donner (Albany: State University of New York Press, 1993), xx-xxi.

[4] For al-Ṭabarī's redaction methods, see Qāsim al-Sāmarrā'ī, "Introduction," in Sayf b. 'Umar al-Tamīmī, *Kitāb al-Ridda wa al-Futūḥ wa Kitāb al-Jamal wa Masīr 'Ā'isha wa 'Alī*, vol. 1, ed. Qāsim al-Sāmarrā'ī (Leiden: Smitskamp Oriental Antiquarium, 1995), 14-18; and Marianne Engle Cameron, "Sayf at First: The Transmission of Sayf ibn 'Umar in al-Ṭabarī and Ibn 'Asākir," in *Ibn 'Asākir and Early Islamic History*, ed. James E. Lindsay (Princeton: Darwin Press, 2001), 62-78.

[5] Albrecht Noth and Lawrence I. Conrad, *The Early Arabic Historical Tradition: A Source-Critical Study*, trans. Michael Bonner, 2nd ed. (Princeton: Darwin Press, 1994), 16.

[6] For example, see Leone Caetani, *Annali dell'Islām*, vol. 2, part 1: 11 A.H. (Milan: Ulrico Hoepli, 1907), 565.

[7] Noth and Conrad, 17.

[8] For Noth's critique of Wellhausen, see Albrecht Noth, "Der Charakter der ersten großen Sammlungen von Nachrichten zur frühen Kalifenzeit," *Der Islam* 47 (1971): 168-199.

[9] Noth and Conrad, 17.

[10] Ibid.

[11] See Ella Landau-Tasseron, "Sayf Ibn 'Umar in Medieval and Modern Scholarship," *Der Islam* 67 (1990): 1-26.

[12] Ibid., 3; and Martin Hinds, "Sayf ibn 'Umar's Sources on Arabia," in *Studies in Early Islamic History*, eds. Jere Bacharach et al. (Princeton: Darwin Press, 1996), 143-159, esp. 144 ff.

[13] For the tradition-critical school, see Fred M. Donner, *Narratives of Islamic Origins: The Beginnings of Islamic Historical Writing* (Princeton: Darwin Press, 1998), 17.

[14] Noth and Conrad, 2.

[15] See Donner, *Narratives*, 17.

[16] For example, see Patricia Crone, "Historiographical Introduction," *Slaves On Horses: The Evolution of the Islamic Polity* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1980), 3-17.

[17] Noth and Conrad, 17-18.

[18] Ibid., 17.

[19] Ibid.

[20] For the "Chronology of the Events of the *Ridda* (11 A.H.-12 A.H.)," see Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 553-561; and idem, *Chronographia Islamica ossia Riassunto cronologico della storia di tutti i popoli musulmani dall'anno 1 all'anno 922 della Higrah (622-1517 dell'Èra Volgare)*, parts 4 and 5 (Paris: Librairie Paul Geuthner, 1912).

[21] For "The Sources for the Events of the Muslim Conquest of Arabia in the Years 11 and 12 A.H.," see Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 549-552. For "General Consideration on the Relative Value of the Traditions on the Arab Conquests," see ibid., 561-569.

[22] Carl H. Becker, "The Expansion of the Saracens – The East," in *The Cambridge Medieval History*, vol. 2, eds. H.M. Gwatkin et al. (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1913), 335-337.

[23] Wathīma b. Mūsā b. al-Furāt, *Watīma's Kitāb-ar-Ridda aus Ibn Ḥağar's Isāba; ein Beitrag zur Geschichte des Abfalls der Araberstämme nach Muhammads Tod*, ed. and trans. Wilhelm Hoenerbach (Wiesbaden: F. Steiner, 1951).

[24] al-Balansī, *Ta'rīkh al-Ridda, Gleaned from al-Iktifā'*, ed. Khurshīd Ahmad Fāriq (New Delhi: Indian Institute of Islamic Studies, 1968).

[25] Elias S. Shoufani, *al-Riddah and the Muslim Conquest of Arabia* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1973).

[26] See above.

[27] Shoufani, 117.

[28] Ibid., 105. In the same vein, Caetani remarks that Sayf being "…possessed by the fervent imagination of a storyteller and devoid of the cold and critical genius of the historian, spurned with systematic indifference strict chronological bonds" (Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 553-554).

[29] See Shoufani, 117.

[30] For example, see ibid., 147.

[31] Ella Landau-Tasseron, "Aspects of the *Ridda* Wars" (Ph.D. diss., Jerusalem, 1981); idem, "The Participation of Ṭayyi' in the *Ridda*," *JSAI* 5 (1984): 53-71; and idem, "Asad from Jāhiliyya to Islam," *JSAI* 6 (1985): 1-28 (esp. 20-25).

[32] M.J. Kister, "'… *illā bi-ḥaqqihi*…': A Study of an Early *ḥadīth*," *JSAI* 5 (1984): 33-52.

[33] Michael Lecker, *The Banū Sulaym: A Contribution to the Study of Early Islam* (Jerusalem: Hebrew University of Jerusalem, 1989); idem, "Kinda on the Eve of Islam and during the *Ridda*," *JRAS*, 3rd ser., 4:3 (1994): 333-356; and idem, "Judaism among Kinda and the *Ridda* of Kinda," *JAOS* 115:4 (1995): 635-650.

[34] Muhammad Izhar ul-Haq, "Poetry of the *Riddah* Wars: Its Literary, Political and Religious Aspects" (Ph.D. diss., Indiana University, 1998).

[35] Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Kitāb al-Ghazawāt*, 4 vols., ed. Aḥmad Ghunaym (Cairo: n.p., 1983); and idem, *Ghazawāt Ibn Ḥubaysh*, vol. 1, ed. Suhayl Zakkār (Beirut: Dār al-Fikr, 1992).

[36] al-Wāqidī, *Kitāb al-Ridda*, ed. Muhammad Hamidullah (Paris: Tougui, 1989); idem, *Kitāb al-Ridda*, ed. Yaḥyā al-Jubūrī (Beirut: Dār al-Gharb al-Islāmī, 1990); and idem, *Kitāb al-Ridda*, ed. Maḥmūd 'A. Abū-'l-Hayr ('Ammān: Dār al-Furqān, 1991).

[37] Sayf b. 'Umar al-Tamīmī, *Kitāb al-Ridda wa al-Futūḥ wa Kitāb al-Jamal wa Masīr 'Ā'isha wa 'Alī*, 2 vols., ed. Qāsim al-Sāmarrā'ī (Leiden: Smitskamp Oriental Antiquarium, 1995).

[38] M.J. Kister, "The Struggle against Musaylima and the Conquest of Yamāma," *JSAI* 27 (2002): 1-56; Rudolf von Sellheim, "Zu M.J. Kister's 'The Struggle against Musaylima,'" *Die Welt des Orients* 35 (2005): 158-168.

[39] Abdullah al-Askar, *al-Yamama in the Early Islamic Era* (Reading, U.K.: Ithaca Press, 2002); originally issued as Abdullah Ibrahim al-Askar, "Regional Politics, A Case-Study: al-Yamama in the 6th and 7th Centuries," (Ph.D. diss., University of California, Los Angeles (UCLA), 1985).

[40] Al Makin, *Representing the Enemy: Musaylima in Muslim Literature* (Frankfurt am Main: Peter Lang, 2010), 55-56.

[41] The six lost sources include: (i) Abū Mikhnaf's (d. 774 C.E.) *Apostasy* (*al-Ridda*) (Ibn al-Nadīm, *The Fihrist of al-Nadīm: A Tenth-Century Survey of Muslim Culture*, vol. 1, ed. and trans. Bayard Dodge (New York: Columbia University Press, 1970), 201); (ii) Isḥāq b. Bishr's *The Apostasy* (Ibid., 202); (iii) Sayf b. 'Umar's (d. ca. 800 C.E.) *Kitāb al-Ridda* (although the *ridda* portion is lost, al-Ṭabarī's (d. 923 C.E.) chronography preserves lengthy extracts) (Ibid., 203); (iv) Hishām b. Muḥammad al-Kalbī's (d. 819 C.E.) *Kitāb Musaylima al-Kadhdhāb* (Ibid., 210; Noth and Conrad, 30); (v) al-Madā'inī's (d. 843 C.E.) *The Apostasy* (Ibn al-Nadīm, vol. 1, 223); and (vi) Abū Isḥāq's (9th century C.E.) *Apostasy* (Ibid., 241). The two fragmentary sources that have been partially reconstructed include: (vii) Wathīma b. Mūsā's (d. 851 C.E.) *Kitāb al-Ridda*; and (viii) al-Balansī's (d. 1237 C.E.) *Ta'rīkh al-Ridda*. The single extant source is (ix) al-Wāqidī's (d. 823 C.E.) *Kitāb al-Ridda*. Its title is given by Ibn al-Nadīm as *Kitāb al-Ridda wa al-Dār* (Ibn al-Nadīm, vol. 1, 215; Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 551). For the problematic meaning of *al-Dār*, see Ibn al-Nadīm, vol. 1, 215, fn. 92; and Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 553, Note 2). It is also partially preserved in Ibn Ḥubaysh's (d. 1188 C.E.) *Kitāb al-Ghazawāt*. On the authenticity of al-Wāqidī's *Kitāb al-Ridda*, see Miklos Muranyi, "Ein neuer Bericht über die Wahl des ersten Kalifen Abū Bakr," *Arabica* 25:3 (Sep., 1978): 236, fn. 2; and cf. J.M.B. Jones, "Ibn Isḥāq and al-Wāqidī: The Dream of 'Ātika and the Raid to Nakhla in Relation to the Charge of Plagiarism," *BSOAS* 22:1/3 (1959): 41-51. For "The Sources for the Events of the Muslim Conquest of Arabia in the Years 11 and 12 A.H.," see Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 549-552.

[42] Jan Assmann, "Mnemohistory and the Construction of Egypt," in *Moses the Egyptian: The Memory of Egypt in Western Monotheism* (Cambridge, Massachusetts: Harvard University Press, 1997), 1-22.

[43] For "Sayf's Sources in General," see Hinds, "Sayf ibn 'Umar's Sources," 147. For Sayf's reliance on 'Syrian sources,' see ibid., 156, fn. 41. For general information on Sayf, see Ibn al-Nadīm, vol. 2, 1095; and F.M. Donner, s.v. Sayf b. 'Umar, *EI*[2].

[44] On the settlement of the Banū Ḥanīfa (of Bakr b. Wā'il) and Tamīm in al-Kūfa, see Makin, *Representing*, 45, fn. 19, and 53; and Michael G. Morony, *Iraq after the Muslim Conquest* (Princeton: Princeton

University Press, 1984), 241. Ibn Nawwāḥa, a partisan of Musaylima, is also said to have been executed in al-Kūfa (al-Balādhurī, *Kitāb Futūḥ al-Buldān*, ed. M.J. de Goeje, 2nd ed. (Leiden: Brill, 1968), 87).

[45] For the nature of "disparate and contradictory traditions," see Noth, "Der Charakter," 168-199; and Marc Bloch, *The Historian's Craft*, trans. Peter Putnam (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1953), 112. For the complementary method for reconciling seemingly contradictory reports, see Shoufani, 143 f. For competing claims as to the identity of Musaylima's slayer, see al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 88 f.; al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 116; Makin, *Representing*, 239 f. and 245; and al-Wāqidī, *The Life of Muḥammad: al-Wāqidī's Kitāb al-Maghāzī*, trans. Rizwi Faizer et al. (New York: Routledge, 2011), 131, 139-140, and 425.

[46] For Ibn Isḥāq's revised death date (from 767 to 761 C.E.), see Chase F. Robinson, *Islamic Historiography* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2003), xiv.

[47] Assmann, 2. For *'iṣma*, see Uri Rubin, *The Eye of the Beholder: The Life of Muḥammad as Viewed by the Early Muslims, A Textual Analysis* (Princeton: Darwin Press, 1995), 60-61 and 220-221.

[48] For "Fallacies of Narration," see David Hackett Fischer, *Historians' Fallacies: Toward a Logic of Historical Thought* (New York: Harper & Row, 1970), 131-163.

[49] Tables 1.1, 1.2, and 1.3 adapted from ibid., 135 f. and 142 ff.

[50] Ibn Isḥāq, *The Life of Muḥammad: A Translation of Ibn Isḥāq's Sīrat Rasūl Allāh*, trans. A. Guillaume (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1955), 3.

[51] For topoi and schemata, see Noth and Conrad, passim.

[52] For example, for the transfer of the obstruction topos, cf. al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 131, and Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 54. Also, for the severance and transfer of Musaylima's title "Lord of al-Yamāma" to Ṭulayḥa as "Lord of Khaybar," see Ella Landau-Tasseron, s.v. Ṭulayḥa, *EI*[2].

[53] al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 89.

[54] For Sayf's reliance on 'Syrian sources,' see Hinds, "Sayf," 156, fn. 41.

[55] For causal links and transitional formulae (or 'causal subordinators'), see Noth and Conrad, 57 f. and 110; and Michael J. Toolan, *The Stylistics of Fiction: A Literary-linguistic Approach* (London and New York: Routledge, 1990), 241.

[56] al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 90.

[57] Ibid.

[58] For the problem of time perspective, see Noth and Conrad, 58; John Wansbrough, "Res Ipsa Loquitur: History and Mimesis," in *The Sectarian Milieu: Content and Composition of Islamic Salvation History* (Amherst, New York: Prometheus Books, 2006), 169; and Toolan, 236-254, esp. 240.

[59] For a treatment of the process of accretion in relation to the Battle of Manzikert, see Carole Hillenbrand, *Turkish Myth and Muslim Symbol: The Battle of Manzikert* (Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 2007).

[60] For the reports on Ibn Nawwāḥa's execution and "the tendency towards growth," see Makin, *Representing*, 37-54.

[61] Ibid., 40, 46, and cf. 102, fn. 39; and Ibn Kathīr, *The Life of the Prophet Muḥammad: A Translation of al-Sīra al-Nabawiyya*, vol. 4, trans. Trevor Le Gassick (Reading, U.K.: Garnet Publishing Ltd., 1998), 69.

[62] For Sajāḥ as an 'introduced' character, cf. Wellhausen, "Prolegomena," 24, 33, fn. 2, and 36.

[63] For the origin and development of the Sajāḥ-Musaylima narrative cycle, see Geert Jan van Gelder, *The Bad and the Ugly: Attitudes towards Invective Poetry (Hijā') in Classical Arabic Literature* (Leiden: Brill, 1989), 48 f.; Jaakko Hämeen-Anttila, s.v. al-Aghlab al-'Ijlī, *EI*[3]; and al-Nafzāwī, *The Perfumed Garden of Sensual Delight*, trans. Jim Colville (London: Kegan Paul International, 1999), 7-10.

[64] With reference to the Battle of al-Yamāma, Makin remarks that "[i]t is noteworthy that the reports which glorify Muslim forces, i.e., those highlighting the brave acts of Muslim warriors that enabled them to attain victory did indeed grow over the course of time. However, the reports that portray Musaylima and his forces remain meager. In most instances, they shrink; the later the reports, the more silent they are on Musaylima. These Muslim scholars, who had no interest whatsoever in enlarging the story of their enemy, refrained from commenting on Musaylima" (Makin, *Representing*, 248).

[65] Andreas Görke and Gregor Schoeler, "Reconstructing the Earliest *sīra* Texts: The Hiğra in the Corpus of 'Urwa b. al-Zubayr," *Der Islam* 82 (2005): 213.

[66] Noth and Conrad, 217 f.

[67] Carlo Ginzburg, "Clues: Roots of a Scientific Paradigm," *TS* 7:3 (May, 1979): 273-288.

[68] Illustration 1.1 based upon woodcut from Giovanni Morelli, *Italian Painters* (London: John Murray, 1900), 78.

[69] Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 140.

[70] "Ibn Hishām's Notes," in ibid., 791 f.

[71] Landau-Tasseron notes that Sayf was "…only one of many who were discredited by *muḥaddithūn*, and appreciated by other authorities…and [this] does not seem surprising once it is accounted for by competitiveness between disciplines" (Landau-Tasseron, "Sayf Ibn 'Umar," 10-11, also see 12). It is, however, especially noteworthy that among those 'discredited,' the most prominent were in fact early *ridda* historians (e.g., Sayf, al-Wāqidī, Ibn al-Kalbī).

[72] Alois Musil, *Northern Neğd: A Topographical Itinerary* (New York: American Geographical Society, 1928), 221-24. On Musil's long-overdue vindication of Sayf's reports (e.g., on Dūmat al-Jandal and on Khālid b. al-Walīd's Syrian campaign), see Hinds, "Sayf," 146.

[73] Translation adapted from A.C.F. Verity, "Two Poems of Abū'l-'Alā al-Ma'arrī," *JAL* 2 (1971): 42-46.

[74] For the "Chronology of the Events of the Ridda (11 A.H.-12 A.H.)," see Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 553.

[75] For the "Assessment" of Sayf's sources, see Hinds, "Sayf," 156. For Wellhausen's earlier critique of Sayf, see Wellhausen, "Prolegomena," 3-7, esp. 5 ("Für oder wider Saif? das ist die Frage….").

[76] For 'anomalies' evidenced in Sayf's reports, see Donner, "Translator's Forward," xviii-xix. For examples of Sayf's "occasional lapses into the 'narrative present' in tales otherwise couched in the past," see ibid., xix, fn. 14.

[77] For "The Salient Themes of Early Historical Tradition," see Noth and Conrad, 26-61.

[78] Noth and Conrad, 23.

[79] For the historicity of the extant 'Battle-Days of the Arabs' tradition, cf. ibid., 117, fn. 54.

[80] For early partisan groups, see Julius Wellhausen, *The Religio-political Factions in Early Islam*, ed. R.C. Ostle, trans. R.C. Ostle and S.M. Walzer (Amsterdam: North-Holland Publishing Company, 1975).

[81] Wellhausen refers to the *futūḥ* as "die Gesta Dei per Arabes" (Wellhausen, "Prolegomena," 4, fn. 2).

[82] For "Muhammad's Control in Arabia," see Shoufani, 12.

[83] Eickelman conjectures that "…the Banū Ḥanīfa delegation story is one of a number of delegation accounts, as Watt notes, which were invented to increase the prestige of Muḥammad at the expense of Abū Bakr (Dale F. Eickelman, "Musaylima: An Approach to the Social Anthropology of Seventh Century Arabia," *JESHO* 10:1 (Jul., 1967): 34 f.). "The supposed 'deputations' of all the tribes and their conversion are largely pious inventions to magnify the achievement of Muḥammad (and *perhaps* to minimize that of Abū Bakr)" (W. Montgomery Watt, *Muhammad at Medina* (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1956), 80, emphasis added). For the delegations, see M. Lecker, s.v. Wufūd, *EI²*.

[84] "The so-called deputations of the Ḥanīfa to Muḥammad are to be taken with a grain of salt..." (Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 643 f.).

[85] For "Muhammad's Control in Arabia," see Shoufani, 12; and Leone Caetani, "L'insurrezione delle tribù e la conquista d'Arabia («al-Riddah»)," in *Studi di storia orientale*, vol. 3 (Milan: Ulrico Hoepli, 1914): 345-418.

[86] "The designation of these events as 'apostasy' is (consciously or unconsciously) a tendentious one, for as Caetani has convincingly demonstrated, the Muslims' opponents in these struggles included not only apostates, but also – and perhaps in the majority of cases – tribes and tribal groups which in the lifetime of Muḥammad had remained largely or completely independent of the political entity led by him" (Noth and Conrad, 28).

[87] N.B. The notion of 'two Arabias' is employed differently by Christian Décobert, "The Conquest," in *The Expansion of the Early Islamic State*, ed. Fred M. Donner (Aldershot, Hants: Ashgate, 2008), 93.

[88] Based on C.H. Becker's line of reasoning (Shoufani, 73).

[89] "The historians seem to have disregarded the causes of these movements and were concerned mainly with accounting for the war against them…The war was one and the same against all the movements, and the name Riddah gained prevalence for it. The name of the war decided that given to the warriors and their movements" (Ibid., 105).

[90] For mnemolegal and mnemohistorical definitions of what constitutes an 'apostate,' see ibid., 101-105.

[91] Lindner makes a similar observation regarding early Ottoman history (Rudi Lindner, *Explorations in Ottoman Prehistory* (Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press, 2007), 31).

[92] For discussions of periodization, see Andrew J. Polsky, "No Tool is Perfect: Periodization in the Study of American Political Development," *Polity* 37:4 (Oct., 2005): 523-530; and Isaiah Gafni, "Concepts of Periodization and Causality in Talmudic Literature," *JH* 10:1 (Spring 1996): 21-38.

[93] For *jāhiliyya*, see William E. Shepard, s.v. Age of Ignorance, *EQ*.

---

[94] For example, see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 9 and 258.

[95] For the representation of religion in the *jāhiliyya*, see Gerald R. Hawting, s.v. Pre-Islamic Arabia and the Qurʾān, *EQ*; and idem, *The Idea of Idolatry and the Emergence of Islam: From Polemic to History* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1999).

[96] For examples relating to American political history, see Polsky, 526.

[97] For "Preconquest contacts with Arabs," see Clive Holes, *Modern Arabic: Structures, Functions, and Varieties*, rev. ed. (Washington, D.C.: Georgetown University Press, 2004), 35 f.

[98] For 'foreground myopia,' see Polsky, 528.

[99] For 'periodization errors,' see Fischer, 144 ff.

[100] Hawting, s.v. Pre-Islamic.

[101] For examples, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 79-93.

[102] See above.

[103] For the problem of the *basmala* at the signing of the Armistice of al-Ḥudaybiya, see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 504. "[T]he Meccans who objected to this [viz. the *basmala*] as a heading for the protocol of the treaty of al-Ḥudaybiya seem to have regarded *ar-Raḥmān ar-Raḥīm* as proper names" (Richard Bell and W. Montgomery Watt, *Introduction to the Qurʾān* (Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 2005), 111).

[104] al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 81.

[105] For this early Madīnan sermon, see ibid., 87, and cf. Makin, *Representing*, 160.

[106] For example, an early modern Persian doxography preserves eyewitness testimony regarding a sectarian Musaylima movement still active in 1643 C.E. (See *The Dabistán or School of Manners*, vol. 3, trans. David Shea and Anthony Troyer (Paris: Oriental Translation Fund of Great Britain and Ireland, 1843), 2).

[107] For the problems faced by historians addressing heresy, see Averil Cameron, "How to Read Heresiology," *JMEMS* 33:3 (Fall 2003): 473 f.

[108] For a description of Musaylima, see al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 90, and al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 126. For a description of Muḥammad, see al-Ṭabarī, *The Last Years of the Prophet*, vol. 9, trans. I.K. Poonawala (Albany: State University of New York Press, 1985), 157 f.

[109] For example, see Ibn al-Kalbī, *Ǧamharat an-nasab: Das genealogische Werk des Hišām Ibn Muḥammad al-Kalbī*, vol. 1, ed. Werner Caskel (Leiden: Brill, 1966), 4 and 156.

[110] For examples of Musaylima's inverted miracles, see Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 55 f.

[111] For an example of Muḥammad's miracle in which a "…well bubbled up with water," see al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 507.

[112] For a critique of Musaylima as an imitator of Muḥammad's miracles, see Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 637 f., Note 3a-b.

[113] Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 53 f.

[114] "These variations were not uncommon with familiar proper names…" (D.S. Margoliouth, "On the Origin and Import of the Names *Muslim* and *Ḥanīf*," *JRAS* (1903): 467 f.); for examples, see ibid. "The word Musaylima is a diminutive of Maslama (given to Musaylima in *Kāmil*, ii, 32; Balādhurī, 422), a name used in Yemāmah and elsewhere, and signifying 'Safety,' being a derivative from a root which is the source of a number of proper names. As we have already seen, names from the same root were regarded to some extent as interchangeable at this period; and I think there would be little difficulty about regarding Muslim as meaning a follower of a man named Maslamah or Aslam…" (Ibid., 484).

[115] For Abū Hurayra as governor of al-Yamāma, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 131 f. For diminutive names, see Alois Musil, *Arabia Deserta: A Topographical Itinerary* (New York: American Geographical Society, 1927), 540. For the false etymology of the name Abū Hurayra, see S.A. Bonebakker and Michael Fishbein, *A Reader of Classical Arabic Literature* (Venice, Italy: Università Ca'Foscari, 1995), 75; and cf.: J. Robson, s.v. Abū Hurayra, *EI²*; and G.H.A. Juynboll, s.v. Abū Hurayra, *EI³*.

[116] For the epithet al-Amīn, see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 81 and 86.

[117] For examples of these anecdotes (e.g., "The Rebuilding of the Kaʿba When the Apostle Acted as Umpire"), see ibid., 81, 84-87, and cf. 86. However, Ibn Isḥāq relates that the Banū Quraysh (*qawm*) originally knew Muḥammad only by his given name (*ism*), al-Amīn (*illā al-amīnᵘ*) (Ibn Isḥāq, *Das Leben Muhammed's nach Muhammed Ibn Ishâk*, vol. 1, part 1, ed. Ferdinand Wüstenfeld (Göttingen: Dieterichsche Universitäts–Buchhandlung, 1858), 117). For the problem of Muḥammad's name, see Claude Gilliot, "Nochmals: Hieß der Prophet Muḥammad?" in *Die Entstehung einer Weltreligion II: Von der koranischen Bewegung zum Frühislam*, vol. 2, eds. Markus Groß et al. (Tübingen: Verlag Hans Schiler,

2011), 53-95; and cf. Margoliouth, 467 ff.). For a further discussion, see the Muslim-Mu'min distinction, passim, and esp. Chapter 3, under the subsection entitled "Constitution."

[118] For examples of these multiple occasions, see al-Balādhurī, s.v. Abū Bakr, *Ansāb al-Ashrāf*, vol. 8, ed. Maḥmūd Firdaws 'Aẓm (Damascus: Dār al-Yaqẓa al-'Arabiyya, 1997), 147.

[119] For the heresiologist's 'rhetorical techniques', see Cameron, 477 and 484.

[120] For this tradition, see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 648, and cf. Makin, *Representing*, 160.

[121] On "How to Read Hagiography," see Rebecca J. Manring, *The Fading Light of Advaita Ācārya: Three Hagiographies* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2011), 5 and 8 f.

[122] Translation adapted from al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 125.

[123] For Musaylima's authority over the Banū Ḥanīfa, see Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 635.

[124] For the martyrdom of Musaylima, cf. *Dabistán*, vol. 3, 11.

[125] The corpse was identified as al-Rajjāl (al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 126). "How they [viz. hagiographers] handle death can be as telling as what they say about birth" (Manring, 8 f.).

[126] The *isnād* reads: "Ibn Ḥumayd – Salamah – Ibn Isḥāq" (al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 126).

[127] For the tradition on Musaylima's 'longevity,' see Kister, "Struggle," 6.

[128] For these fragments, see Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 636-640.

[129] Translation adapted from al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 109.

[130] Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 636 and 643.

[131] "[A] great deal (even, perhaps, too much) has been written about the nature of 'historical understanding,' identified by such tags as 'metahistory,' 'dialectic,' and 'hermeneutics.' But no amount of conceptual theorizing has been able to dispel the apparently deep-seated conviction that 'history' is essentially historiography. Whatever acts of collection and collocation might precede the composition, its expression is narrative. I am also inclined to believe that its perception too is narrative: that is to say, follows a 'story-line,' has something like a 'plot,' is linear (exhibits causal nexus) and cumulative (everything counts). It is according to these parameters that one can understand the seductive power of sentence structure. Attempts to escape this force are made from time to time, e.g. in 'structuralism' by dismissing the concept of 'referent'; in 'deconstruction' by denying 'syntactic' continuity in experience. Neither has found, or is likely to find, universal assent. The reason for that lies probably in some vague but enduring conviction that the record has got to be readable. And this will be as much a matter of epistemology as of literature" (Wansbrough, "Res Ipsa Loquitur," 170).

[132] For "Narrative Thinking as a Heuristic Process," see John A. Robinson and Linda Hawpe, *Narrative Psychology: The Storied Nature of Human Conduct*, ed. Theodore R. Sarbin (Westport, Connecticut: Praeger, 1986), 111-125.

[133] On "Interpretation in History" and the question of historicity (i.e., "wie es eigentlich gewesen"), see Hayden White, *Tropics of Discourse: Essays in Cultural Criticism* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1978), 59 ff.

[134] For the calculations involved in determining this date, see Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 557 f. Regarding the winter season, also cf.: Wellhausen, "Prolegomena," 9 and 37; al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 119; and al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 131.

[135] For "The Economic Activities of al-Yamāma," see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 44.

[136] Q. 14:37 cited in Muhammad Hamidullah, *The Battlefields of the Prophet Muhammad with Maps, Illustrations and Sketches: A Contribution to Muslim Military History* (Hyderabad, Deccan: n.p., 1973), 37. See J.W. Fück, review of *The Battlefields of the Prophet Muhammad with Maps, Illustrations and Sketches*, by Muhammad Hamidullah, *Oriens* 8:2 (Dec., 1955): 309. "The fertile soil of Yamāma could supply Mecca with grain necessary for its population" (Kister, "Struggle," 7).

[137] Fred M. Donner, *Muhammad and the Believers: At the Origins of Islam* (Cambridge, Massachusetts: The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 2010), 47.

[138] For "The Markets of the Arabs," see Michael Bonner, "Arabian Silent Trade: Profit and Nobility in the 'Markets of the Arabs'," in *Histories of the Middle East: Studies in Middle Eastern Society, Economy and Law in Honor of A.L. Udovitch*, eds. A. Sabra et al. (Leiden: Brill, 2011), 51.

[139] For "Historical and General Sociological Types," cf. Susan J. Hekman, "Weber's Ideal Type: A Contemporary Reassessment," *Polity* 16:1 (Autumn 1983): 123 ff.

[140] For "The Three Pure Types of Legitimate Authority," see Max Weber, *The Theory of Social and Economic Organization*, trans. A.M. Henderson and Talcott Parsons (London: Collier-Macmillan Limited, 1947), 328 f. For "Combinations of the Different Types of Authority," see ibid., 382-386.

---

[141] See Max Weber, "Politics as a Vocation," in *The Vocation Lectures*, trans. Rodney Livingstone (Indianapolis: Hackett Publishing Company, 2004), 34.

[142] For examples, see Décobert, 93-96.

CHAPTER TWO
EARLY PROTO-ISLĀM

Crisis

<u>Transformations</u>

The Persian-Sāsānian Empire had extended its sphere of influence into central Arabia (al-Yamāma) as early as the third century C.E. With the decline of its Lakhmid client state in the south-western 'Irāqī city of al-Ḥīra, al-Yamāma came under the sway of the Kinda.[1] This tribe consolidated its power over central and northern Arabia, thereby forging a formidable confederacy. However, its rule in al-Yamāma was short-lived. Intertribal conflicts and wars of succession bled them dry. When the Kinda fled central Arabia around 530 C.E., a political vacuum emerged in its wake.[2] To suit the exigencies of the moment, its constituent nomads reverted to forming their own temporary alliances. As a result, decentralization – coupled with the breakdown of frontier defenses – created the crisis of town and village life during this period.

Decentralization

Besides settlements and oases, central Arabia consisted largely of pasture districts demarcating particular nomadic spheres of action and influence. These comprised water-sources, domesticated animals, settlements, and regional markets. Although located in a specific pasturage and projecting itself as a single entity, a nomadic group was nonetheless divided along lines of "kinship, geographical location, or interests."[3] In a region characterized by the scarcity of resources, raiding and tribute to a large degree

informed central Arabian socio-political and economic structures. Raiding was a reciprocal means by which resources were distributed and redistributed in the region. Reduced to tributary status by the nomads, the sedentary populace was unable to rise above the local level. Accordingly, this precluded the formation of alliances to secure their territorial, agricultural, and commercial interests against nomadic despoliations. Therefore, villages, towns, and settlements fell within the purview of the nomadic group within whose pasturage they happened to be situated. Since nomads either migrated according to the changing seasons, demographic and ecological necessity, or displacement by other tribes, pasturages frequently changed hands. As a result, this led to the high frequency of the formation and dissolution of nomadic alliances.[4] For the sedentary populations, this meant shouldering the economic burden of multiple tributes which became all the more difficult to bear. Left unchecked, competing nomadic groups wreaked havoc on the settlements, destabilizing al-Yamāma. These unstable social, economic, and political conditions provided the catalyst for the rise of a number of local and regional enterprises emerging to fill the power vacuum. Among these was the Banū Ḥanīfa tribe.

Tribe

Nomads order societal relations according to (i) family, (ii) clan, (iii) tribe, and (iv) confederacy. The basic unit of a tribe is the family. This independent group labors together to provide daily necessities for its members. For the purpose of protection and herd management, a group of families forms a clan. As a political reaction to outside pressures and threats, clans coalesce into a tribe headed by an elected chief who serves as first councilor. In turn, a tribe is a constituent element within a macro political order,

namely, a confederacy.[5] As larger expressions and extensions of aligned tribes, confederacies provide regional socio-economic and political stability. However, they are not conglomerations solely of tribes; rather, overseen by a chief, they form an alliance among the nomads and the sedentary populations. The actual or derivative relations among members of a clan, tribe, and confederacy are forged through the mechanism of kinship which necessitates common interests, not blood relations.[6] On the clan as well as the tribal and confederate levels, genealogy facilitates the formation and dissolution of these groups. Nomads, however, do not exclusively participate in tribal forms of organization; both rural and urban sedentary populations are involved as well.

Retribalization

Coexisting as an alternative structure to centralizing enterprises (e.g., Kinda), tribal society serves the same essential functions of organizing and governing populations. Known as retribalization, centralized enterprises transform into decentralized tribes when they cease to secure the safety and welfare of its subjects.[7] A centralizing enterprise dissolves when (i) the bureaucratic apparatus breaks down, (ii) commercial networks destabilize, and (iii) the enterprise can no longer supply food stuffs. Under these conditions, local populations look elsewhere.

In the second quarter of the sixth century, al-Yamāma had witnessed the breakdown of the Kinda's institutions and authority. Dependent upon the security of the countryside, the urban food supply had been compromised. The number of predatory pastoral nomads pillaging sedentary agricultural populations increased dramatically during this period. Their numbers included internally displaced sedentary populations (i.e., "ex-farmers") who adapted to nomadic pastoralism and raiding as a means of

survival.[8] The centralized Kinda enterprise had in effect failed to protect and provision its subjects.

In the aftermath of the Kinda's flight south to Ḥaḍramawt, the Banū Ḥanīfa started to overtake al-Yamāma's numerous fortresses and villages. Many of the Kinda's former subjects sided with the Ḥanafī chief, Qatāda b. Maslama (r. until ca. 600 C.E.).[9] In exchange for protection, he received tribute from al-Yamāma's sedentary population. Central Arabian cities, their agricultural hinterlands, and trade routes soon came under the protection of the Banū Ḥanīfa. Spearheaded by them, the new nomadic-sedentary alliance was successful because of the social positioning of Qatāda's semi-sedentary clan. The fact that his clan was not purely nomadic allowed him to negotiate with the sedentary population.[10] As chief and first councilor, he forged this alliance by balancing the vested interests of both his nomadic and sedentary followers. By making them clients of the kin group, the sedentary population was assimilated into the tribe. During his chieftainship, the Banū Ḥanīfa went from raiding to protecting its newly acquired Yamāmī towns.[11]

Detribalization

When the townspeople submitted to Qatāda's chieftaincy, he confirmed their land tenures.[12] Over time, the direct and sustained contact of the nomads with sedentary populations set into motion the process of detribalization.[13] This transformation from a decentralized tribe into a centralized state is accompanied by sedentarization, that is, the settlement of the nomads. As more Banū Ḥanīfa began to settle and till the soil, affiliation with place substituted kinship. In other words, the nomads increasingly identified with their town and territory.[14] The set of demands placed upon Qatāda to govern an agricultural and urbanized society with its complex economy and relations,

moreover, required that he adopt 'sedentary models' of governance.[15] Status was now

accorded in the manner of a centralizing state, that is, through a tax register.

Consequently, the Banū Ḥanīfa was fundamentally transformed in terms of social

organization. No longer an exclusively nomadic tribe, it became a joint sedentary-

nomadic confederacy.

As a result of the peace secured by the Banū Ḥanīfa, a symbiosis emerged

between the nomadic and sedentary populations.[16] Nomads bartered for dates, wheat,

equipment, utensils, and weapons; in exchange, they traded clarified butter, domesticated

animals, and other animal products. This commercial activity between these two sectors

was not limited to the marketplace. In fact, merchants from the city would venture into

the nomadic zone to transact business. Additionally, the nomads – through the

institutions of companionship and honor – provided for the safe passage of goods and

persons through their respective territories. This extended the reach of al-Yamāma far

beyond the isolated Najd plateau (located in central Arabia). Furthermore, owing to the

interaction between these two sectors, cultural traits (e.g., language, values, mores,

traditions) were transmitted, and actual and fictional kinship relations developed.[17] Peace

and prosperity turned into profit, fueling unprecedented economic, demographic, and

urban growth in the area.

Imbalance

The ancient oasis-town of Jaww in al-Yamāma flourished into a sizeable city. This and

other similar oasis-cities (e.g., Ḥajr) developed when a cluster of villages unified. These

oasis-cities gradually drew other surrounding villages into their urban production and

consumption economy. They also attracted the inhabitants of nearby villages which

ultimately led to an 'urban demographic implosion' and depopulation of the agricultural hinterland.[18] This implosion eventually turned into a rural demographic explosion that created a multiplicity of new villages. This enlarged rural countryside provisioned the city, while nomadic pastoralists subsisted on its fringes. Complex economic, social, and political relations resulted from this urbanization and ruralization. Ultimately, this stratification bred strife.

Stratification

Commerce, mining, and agriculture formed the main economic basis for these urban centers and their hinterlands. These cities' complex division of labor included nobles, peasants, merchants, artisans, and camel drivers. Consequently, this division of labor eventually overshadowed kinship. For this reason, social relations became increasingly based upon economic stratification.[19] At first, these self-sufficient cities engaged in commerce through surplus production. Commerce became even more significant over time. For example, the area's main market in al-Falaj boasted four hundred shops and a bustling slave trade.[20] Once the marketplace connected the nomads to the city, their business became essential to the local and regional economy.

al-Yamāma prided itself on the high quality of its succulent meats, white wheat, curative water, and wide variety of dates.[21] In addition to cultivating date palms, staples (e.g., barley), and small fruit bearing trees (e.g., pomegranates), it also produced cash crops (e.g., sugar). Total agricultural yield increased at an exponential rate in its forty-three valleys. For instance, it produced more dates than all of western Arabia combined.[22] This intensive agriculture required large sums of investment and operating capital for the construction and maintenance of irrigation canals. In particular, its

growing agricultural sector depended heavily upon access to reclaimable land and intensive manual labor. Agriculturally-linked industries (e.g., milling, tool manufacture, distribution) were affected by the investment upturn.[23] Therefore, sizeable increases in investment led to the rise of a whole agricultural sector that further drew the rural population into the urban economy.

There was no shortage of labor in al-Yamāma. In fact, peasants, transients, and slaves were abundant, cheap, and expendable. Slaves, for example, comprised one third of its total population, with upwards of four thousand slaves working a single plantation.[24] Agricultural and industrial laborers, though they formed the majority, were only begrudgingly accepted in society. Only those of 'pure' tribal descent of the upper stratum held leadership positions. Yet, as a malleable device, tribal descent forged together an inclusive urban, rural, and nomadic elite. The urban notables included the old landed aristocracy whose landholdings Qatāda had guaranteed. To these were added new Ḥanafī landholding elite families similar to that of Qatāda. The rural gentry consisted of village heads and farm owners, while the nomadic nobility was composed of lesser nomadic chiefs, notably, Thumāma b. Uthāl (d. 632 C.E.). The rural and nomadic gentry held great power. Rural heads had the ability to refuse grain, while nomadic chiefs had the capacity to block trade. Therefore, all three gentrified classes formed an uneasy alliance.[25] Although civic identification ostensibly unified these elites and their constituencies, power plays at court reverberated throughout al-Yamāma along kinship lines.

Disparity

In a land of plenty, the underlying problem was not production, but distribution.[26] Agricultural surplus and industrial products (e.g., textiles, leather goods) were exported far and wide. Yamāmī grain not only supplied western Arabia (e.g., Makka and al-Madīna), but also made its way into markets in southern 'Irāq. Agricultural profits, gold and silver bullion, and commercial tax revenues poured into elite coffers all the while. Reinvesting in agricultural expansion and land reclamation, these absentee landlords and merchants sought to meet foreign market demands. These ventures, however, compromised domestic needs, placing an unbearable stress upon the land and its people. Unable to cope, indebted farmers became tenants, a virtually free labor source.[27] The gap between the haves and have-nots widened. This disparity resulted in the corrosion of the patron-client system, moreover, disrupting nomad-sedentary relations.[28]

Qatāda's transformation of the Banū Ḥanīfa into a sedentary polity marginalized those nomads who had brought him to power. By means of taxation, he and his immediate successor regulated both their nomadic and sedentary subjects.[29] The interests of the nomads were antithetical to the consolidation of Ḥanafī power. No longer needed for their military services, some nomads were reduced to cottagers, while the poorer ones were relocated with their flocks to pasturages on the other side of the escarpment dividing al-Yamāma.[30] Tossed to the side away from al-Yamāma's agricultural heartland, these disenfranchised nomads were alienated. Meanwhile, their desert brethren skirted southern al-Yamāma on the borders of the Empty Quarter. Since both the urban labor class and rural populace maintained active kinship relations with the nomads, these three lower strata of society posed a formidable challenge to Qatāda's authority. For example, as agriculture pushed its limits on the desert fringes, it encroached upon the land of the

semi-nomadic Tamīm.[31]   As a result, heightened Ḥanafī-Tamīmī tensions slowly edged the nomads toward open revolt.

What is more, the majority of al-Yamāma's sedentary populace continued to live in poverty and squalor. For this reason, some Ḥanafī laborers made their way back to western Arabia, the original homeland of the Banū Ḥanīfa.[32]   A moral uncertainty set in throughout al-Yamāma's lower social strata. Justice gave way to greed, governance to tyranny.   These forces ripped at the very seams of the traditional social fabric. Consequently, al-Yamāma was on the brink of splitting three ways.   The plight of the poor and disillusioned, however, did not go unnoticed.   Their crisis gave rise to a mediator: Aslam the reformer poet.

Reform

Mediator

The agricultural peasantry bore the brunt of the shift from a subsistence to an emergent commercial economy.   The vested interests of the nobles (i.e., urban merchants, landowners, and gentrified chiefs) were diametrically opposed to those of the commoners (i.e., manual laborers, peasants, and nomads). Food rations grew thin. Diminishing rural resources put these peasants at odds with their nomadic neighbors. Increasingly resorting to predation, these nomads disrupted the transit routes, thereby compromising the security of Persian trade. No longer could the nobles turn a blind eye to the mounting crisis. In response to this existential threat, the nature and role of authority in al-Yamāma became radically transformed.

Protest

Order and stability constituted the core interests of the peasantry who needed this security to conduct their daily social and economic activities. Now vulnerable to external attack, they faced the difficult task of survival in a time when deadly nomadic raids razed their crops, ravished their women, and devastated their villages. They desperately groped in the dark for an immediate solution to their predicament. At one time, the peasantry at least had an option. Although caught between a rock and a hard place, they could either submit to the nomads or the city dwellers for protection. However, times had changed. The peasants were left to their own devices. They had to rely on themselves, fend for themselves, and defend their own land. In the midst of this chaos, an agrarian poet vented his grievances against the deteriorating state of his kinsmen. In al-Yamāma's central market square, his voice cut through the din of the crowd. He implored them:

> Defend your cultivated land,
> Shelter the one seeking favor,
> And oppose the oppressor.[33]

His verses polarized the populace, while galvanizing the peasants into action. Swearing by the honor of their women, he openly declared the virtues of his fellow plowmen:

> By the women who scatter seed at planting,
> By the women reaping at harvest,
> By the women who winnow wheat,
> By the women who grind flour,
> By the women who break bread,
> By the women who break bread into crumbs,
> By the women who gobble mouthfuls of grease and fat,
> You [men] have been favored over the nomads,
> Nor shall the city folk take precedence over you.[34]

Capturing the hearts and minds of his people, Aslam, the people's poet, channeled 'the strength of local interests' into a grassroots movement.[35]

The son of his village, Aslam b. Ḥabīb (d. 633 C.E.) was much more closely attuned to the challenges facing the peasants.[36] His hometown was located in the al-

'Āriḍ district of central al-Yamāma where his family owned some farmland in al-Haddār and Ubāḍ.[37] Situated near stable sources of water, al-'Āriḍ was well-known for its irrigated valleys and agricultural produce, particularly its wheat. Within this district lived the sedentary Banū Ḥanīfa.[38] al-'Āriḍ's most important geographical feature was the Ṭuwayq escarpment, which acted as a natural defense against the Banū Ḥanīfa nomads on the other side. At the heart of al-'Āriḍ stood its commercial capital, Ḥajr where trade from Persia, 'Irāq, al-Yaman, al-Baḥrayn, and al-Ḥijāz converged.[39] As a social and political act in the market square, Aslam's rustic poetry critiqued both his society and its rulers.[40] His civil disobedience did not go unnoticed. Promulgated through public oration and private conversation, his message spread far and wide, travelling along the pan-Arabian trade network. As a result, he attracted a growing community of followers. Noteworthy were his highborn companions, the learned diplomat, al-Rajjāl b. 'Unfuwa (d. 633 C.E.), and Muḥakkim b. al-Ṭufayl (d. 633 C.E.), the 'old warhorse of al-Yamāma' (*muḥakkim al-yamāma*).[41] Moreover, Aslam's preaching came to the attention of none other than Hawdha b. 'Alī, the future successor to al-Yamāma's first man.

Coalition

Hawdha hailed from the Suḥaym b. Murra clan of Banū Ḥanīfa.[42] His powerful mercantile family controlled the caravan trade, while simultaneously monopolizing political control in Jaww. Prior to his bid for power, he had failed to secure a Persian caravan train.[43] Beset by Tamīm nomads, the caravan's precious cargo was lost. This transgression sparked an intertribal war between the Banū Ḥanīfa and Tamīm. Threatened by his rivals, Hawdha turned to the Persians who dealt the Tamīm a decisive blow. Eclipsed by Hawdha (r. ca. 600-630 C.E.), Qatāda's coalition fell apart. The

capital of al-Yamāma then moved south from Ḥajr to Jaww. In return for helping him subject the Tamīm to his will, Hawdha secured trade routes vital to Persian interests. In exchange for performing and executing this duty, the Persian monarch deputized him as a vassal prince, bestowing the title 'King of al-Yamāma' upon him.[44] He was in turn known as 'bearer of the crown' (*dhū al-tāj*).[45] Thereafter, he set out to consolidate his power.

Hawdha's retinue included al-Rajjāl, Muḥakkim, Mujjā'a b. Murāra (the land magnate), and Thumāma b. Uthāl (the chief of the Banū Ḥanīfa nomads).[46] An astute politician, Hawdha understood the fragility of his authority in the face of the forces ripping at the seams of al-Yamāma's social fabric. Having curbed nomadic power on the periphery, he now moved to limit their range of action on the home front. During Qatāda's tenure, policies were instituted to forcibly settle the nomads in eastern al-Yamāma in order to neutralize their mobility. A settled population is governable and taxable. However, Qatāda's plan was only partially successful. Restive nomads poured into western al-Yamāma, swelling Thumāma's ranks. Ruling to the west of the Ṭuwayq escarpment, while Hawdha ruled the east, Thumāma was known as one of 'the two heads of al-Yamāma.'[47] In order to maintain balance of power, Hawdha looked to the rural population to check the rising nomadic chief. His experience with the Tamīm also demonstrated the limits of unorganized steppe warfare in light of the advanced state of Persian arms (e.g., infantry, armored cavalry, and siegecraft). Accordingly, he began to deliberately shift away from the original core comprising the Banū Ḥanīfa nomads to a sedentarized military organization.[48] Moreover, in rebuilding al-Yamāma's economy, Hawdha recognized the central role of the agricultural sector. For this reason, he turned

to Aslam, the de facto agrarian leader with whom he shared a common enemy, the envious nomads. Joining forces with Aslam, their new coalition reformed society in order to strike an equitable balance centered on an inclusive city. Aslam's verses effectively fashioned a new civic identity:

> I swear by this city;
> And do not leave from this city
> Until you have property and progeny,
> And [you] grow numerous and are bound to it [viz. the city];
> So imagine and reckon
> Until the end of time,
> In spite of those who envy.[49]

In time, the broadening scope of Aslam's concerns expanded his role from rural poet to sage-at-large.

Sage

Building on his role as rural poet, Aslam became a righter of wrongs. In al-Yamāma, for example, the urban elite monopolized water rights that were crucial to the irrigation canals. Naturally, the rural peasants required access to these aquifers.[50] This brought matters to a head. In order to prevent a resource war, he sued for peace:

> O immaculate frog,
> Neither do you refuse drink,
> Nor do you muddy the water.[51]

In another similar incident, he fairly redistributed energy resources, calling once again for moderation:

> Indeed, we have given you coals;
> Thus take for yourself and do not hesitate.
> But be cautious [not] to be greedy and not to exceed [the bounds].[52]

Acting as an intermediary between the urban and rural populations and the rich and the poor, Aslam gradually took on the role of society-wide moralist and legislator.

Moralist

Aslam expressed his notion of civic justice with two central concepts, compassion (*al-raḥma*) and the house (*al-dār*).[53] With overtones of kinship, compassion represented his unifying code of conduct personified by the city's merciful deity, al-Raḥmān. As divine protector, al-Raḥmān was the source of al-Yamāma's prosperity. He was 'the deity' (*allāh*) of the farmer, the cottager, the miner, and the merchant alike:

> Remember the grace of the deity (*allāh*) and thank him,
> As he turned for you the sun into a shining lamp,
> And sent heavy rain;
> He brought forth for you the ram and the ewe,
> And granted you silver and glass,
> Gold and silk clothes.
> And it is from his grace that he brought out from the earth pomegranates,
> Grapes, sweet basil,
> Wheat, and bitter plants.[54]

The Arabic root word for compassion ($\sqrt{rḥm}$) also signifies kinship through matrilineal descent (*raḥim*).[55] Aslam was cognizant of the complex kinship relations permeating al-Yamāma's political clientele system. In this patrilineal society, male descent polarized feuding factions. Therefore, Aslam used the mechanism of kinship to broker political relations. He cut across these party lines by appealing to a common matrilineal ancestor. In fact, the city's founding myth recalled the memory of this shared matriarch, al-Yamāma bt. Murra, who had been crucified on the town gate.[56] Originally known as Jaww, Hawdha's new capital was renamed al-Yamāma, a name which eventually broadened to encompass the whole area. In addition, *raḥim* also connotes the physical sense of womb. al-Raḥmān's vibrant city, al-Yamāma is the womb from which its citizens issue forth. This is why the founding of al-Yamāma is akin to the birth of a child:

> The deity (*allāh*) has been gracious to the mother-to-be;
> He has brought forth from her a living being that can move;
> From her very midst.[57]

Aslam's second concept refers to an encircled dwelling (*al-dār*). Overlapping with Hawdha's 'royal reserve,' al-Raḥmān's city was an enclosed sacred communal space.[58] Just as the household was the fundamental unit structuring his village community, he conceived of al-Yamāma as a conglomeration of unified households. Matrilineal kinship and propinquity ordered this inclusive community, bound by common property, intermarriage, and justice. 'Compassion,' 'kinship,' and the 'womb' are thus interlocked in his conception of an inclusive city based upon the household.[59]

Lawgiver

Backed by Hawdha, Aslam issued a series of prescriptive laws collectively known as the *Commandment* (*al-Furqān*).[60] This set of versified moral codes was directed at institutional, social, moral, and legal reform. The town crier (*mu'adhdhin*) who proclaimed these laws in the public square became a permanent feature of Yamāmī life. Aslam's general legal principles reinforced traditional ethics and values (e.g., enjoining the good and forbidding the evil, almsgiving, equity, common defense). In the area of criminal law, a specific statute outlawed female infanticide. Pertaining to family law, he recommended monogamy and prescribed sexual abstinence after the birth of the first child. In terms of commerce, he encouraged foreign merchants to settle in al-Yamāma, while at the same time making it a point to censure their questionable business practices:

> Indeed, we have granted you wealth;
> Thus pray to your lord (*rabb*) and emigrate.
> And, indeed, your wrongdoing is immoral.[61]

As a result of Aslam's inclusive policy, al-Yamāma's population increasingly included Persian mercantile families.[62] To ease the burden on the urban and rural poor, a moratorium was placed on the export of grain.[63] In the same vein, sumptuary laws

limited expenditure for luxury goods. Aslam forbade the consumption of fine wines and called for periodic abstention from food. Looking to Aslam as a role model, modesty and piety now became civic ideals for the effete nobles:

> When I saw their faces they were comely,
> And their complexions were clear,
> And their hands were soft;
> I said to them, 'You shall not come to women,
> Nor drink wine;
> But you are the company of the pious,
> Fasting a day
> And tasking a day.'[64]

A significant portion of the moral code centered on ritual prayer. As the frequency of interactions across kinship and class lines escalated, Aslam instituted ritual practices and urban ceremonies designed to normalize, unify, and legitimize the civic order. In effect, these rituals bolstered the city's shared moral outlook. Their performance became part of al-Yamāma's 'drama of citizenship.'[65] He entreated the citizens:

> Pray to your lord (*rabb*) and do not hesitate
> During the nights and regularly.[66]

In time, he came to realize the special link between the numinous and the mundane:

> The deity (*allāh*) listened to whomever he listened to,
> And made him yearn for good when he yearned,
> And his cause is still arranged in everything that delights him.
> Your lord (*rabb*) saw you and gave you life and preserved you from loneliness,
> And saved you and gave you life on the day of his religion (*yawm dīnih*);
> For us some prayers of the company of the pious,
> Neither miserable nor licentious,
> Staying up at night and fasting by day;
> Indeed your lord (*rabb*) is great,
> The lord (*rabb*) of the clouds and the rain.[67]

Aslam's civic, legal, and moral precepts culminated in a unified religion. The divine and human were bound by reciprocal ties of prosperity and prayer. As a microcosm, the moral order of the city was 'immutable.'[68]

Milieu

<u>From Poet to Prophet</u>

Aslam's reforms were a staggering success. He managed to correct the class imbalance in al-Yamāma. Domestic peace ushered in wealth and prosperity. As the embodiment of piety, the city and its inhabitants were favored by al-Raḥmān. Rumors soon circulated about Aslam's charismatic power (*al-amr*).[69] In the eyes of the common people whom the reformer-poet had freed from the bonds of earthly suffering, he was seen as nothing short of a miracle worker. As the direct link between the city and its patron deity, the nature of his authority consequently transformed. An agrarian poet turned moralist and sage, Aslam – in the popular imagination – was now vested with charismatic and kerygmatic powers. Gossip turned gospel. Soon his image would be cut from the same cloth as that of the prophets.

Miracle Worker

Conceived as 'the lord of the clouds and the rain,' al-Raḥmān was initially a 'god of economy' for peasants dependent upon the harvest.[70] Although now bound to the inclusive city, al-Raḥmān retained these attributes, and Aslam, his agent, became the rainmaker. Good harvests demonstrated the power and efficacy of the patron deity. Summoning down the harvest moon was among the miracles worked through Aslam.[71] In addition, the populace flocked to him to win his blessing. Known for his congenial manner and believed to possess thaumaturgic powers, peasants and nobles alike implored him to work miracles on their behalf.[72] Farmers reliant on irrigation sought him out to consecrate their newly dug wells, while the wealthy courted him to bless them with children. Even nomads came to him in order to ensure long and prosperous lives for their newborn. He was also called upon to pray on behalf of the sick and suffering. As a

result of these intensified interactions and his exposure to multiple conceptions of the divine, Aslam's own understanding of al-Raḥmān grew more complex. Although al-Raḥmān was the city's patron deity, he was not coterminous with al-Yamāma. al-Raḥmān was there from the city's beginning, but it was not his beginning, nor would its end be his.

Prophet

Recast in an urban environment, the figure of al-Raḥmān accrued additional universal characteristics. With the further decline of al-Ḥīra, al-Yamāma received a steady stream of ʿIrāqī Christian scholars seeking patronage. The sum of their transmitted knowledge reinforced and refined the ideological shift concerning the nature of al-Raḥmān. Originating in Christian circles active in al-Yamāma since the fifth century C.E., al-Raḥmān was associated with a host of monotheistic concepts.[73] Once reintroduced, these concepts universalized al-Raḥmān as the transcendental creator and immanent savior. 'The lord of the clouds and the rain' thus transformed into 'the lord of the heavens':

> So praise be to the deity (*allāh*)! Verily life came to where you live;
> Ascend to the king of heaven.[74]

The language of the gospels (e.g., 'kingdom of heaven' (*mulk al-samā'*)) was reasserted.[75] In tune with audience expectations, Aslam's role as reformer was re-scripted to that of religious virtuoso, an inner-worldly ascetic striving to match reality to his ideals.[76] As a holy man, he donned prophetic garb:

> I am a herald (*rasūl*) with whom the creator is pleased,
> The powerful, the generous, and the provider to you.[77]

Warning the wicked away from the road to perdition, Aslam's *Commandment (al-Furqān)* became a measure of salvation (*furqān*).[78] Deviance from god's commandments constituted sin that was to be reckoned on the day of judgment.[79] Inspired by the

archangel Gabriel, *al-Furqān* attained the status of divine revelation.[80] As 'the herald of the deity' (*rasūl allāh*), Aslam ultimately became the vehicle of salvation. His town crier, Ḥujayr b. ʿUmayr, publicly proclaimed the Ḥanafī creed (*shahāda*):

> I witness that there is no deity but al-Raḥmān,
> I witness that ʿAbd al-Raḥmān [viz. Aslam] is the herald of the deity.[81]

Endowed with charismatic and kerygmatic gifts, Aslam possessed the credentials of a true biblical prophet who acted 'In the name of the merciful deity, al-Raḥmān.'[82] Before long, he gathered around him a group of disciples who formed the nucleus of a fast growing communal network spreading throughout Arabia.

The Muslim Movement

Aslam's inclusive city generated a new movement with its accompanying institutions.[83] As word of his prophecy disseminated throughout the peninsula, devotees of al-Raḥmān congregated at al-Yamāma. As a result, the movement took on a life of its own. Additional layers of membership accumulated around Aslam's original circle of close disciples, e.g., al-Rajjāl, Muḥakkim, and ʿAbd Allāh b. al-Nawwāḥa. Consequently, they became apostles by extension.[84] These companions turned their attention to ensuring the continuity of the movement. In order to 'secure the permanence' of Aslam's mission, they moved to routinize his prophetic authority (*al-nubuwwa*) by means of religion and the ritualization of power.[85] They formalized his authority in a distinctively Yamāmī religious institution, i.e., the imāmate (*al-imāma*).[86] His disciples' interests coincided with the legitimation strategy of his ally, Hawdha, who was the functionary leader of al-Yamāma (*sāḥib al-yamāma*).[87]

Islām

Aslam's devotees called themselves the Raḥmāniyya, i.e., followers of al-Raḥmān, the Commiserator.[88] Accordingly, Aslam's honorific title became ʿAbd al-Raḥmān, the servant of al-Raḥmān.[89] Throughout Arabia, his renewed monotheism coalesced with the efforts of Christian missionaries, monks, and preachers. For example, Quss b. Sāʿida – the itinerant Nestorian associated with the Christian community at Najrān – forcefully preached monotheism and resurrection at ʿUkāẓ.[90] This famous market was located near Makka along an increasingly Yamāmī-dominated trade network. In addition, self-generated monotheistic groups (e.g., that of Umayya b. Abī al-Ṣalt at al-Ṭāʾif) later sprang up in cities across Arabia.[91]

As the Imām of al-Yamāma, Aslam founded a non-denominational monotheistic religion. This defining feature set it a world apart from 'competing' confessions.[92] Over the course of time, the nature al-Raḥmān shifted as well. Although beginning as a popular rural god of nature, the urban al-Raḥmān became a domestic deity, and above all, the elite's god of salvation.[93] As a matter of course, when this religion of salvation spread to the illiterate masses, al-Raḥmān was conflated with ʿAbd al-Raḥmān.[94] Once equated with al-Raḥmān, Aslam was naturally looked upon as a personal savior.[95] This reception induced a fundamental shift in the movement. Aslam's followers increasingly identified themselves as Muslims, literally those who 'Aslamed.'[96] Islām was their religion. Facing al-Raḥmān's shrine (*kaʿba*) in Makka, the Muslims prayed three times a day and observed their holy month of Ramaḍān.[97] Ritual ablution with water was permissible, while cleansing with sand was under all circumstances prohibited. Dietary laws restricted consuming the flesh of fowl, and substances inducing altered states of

consciousness were tabooed. Covering family, civil, criminal, and moral law, Islām was a comprehensive religion.

Legitimation

The question of legitimacy in al-Yamāma came to a critical juncture during Hawdha's reign. Early in his career, he had already repelled the forces of the 'king' of al-Ḥīra, 'Amr b. Hind (554-570 C.E.).[98] After that, he had to contend with al-Ḥārith b. Wa'la, a pretender to the throne. He resorted to propaganda by enlisting the services of Maymūn al-A'shā (ca. 570-625 C.E.). This youthful blind poet lambasted the counterclaimant in support of Hawdha's own claims as sovereign.[99] al-Yamāma's internal politics was also characterized by the struggle for a share in power and control of its distribution. Its continued existence depended upon the acquiescence of power by the urban, rural, and nomadic subjects to their political ruler, Hawdha. In turn, Hawdha's appropriation of power necessitated its legitimation through internal justification.[100] Installed as an indirect ruler, he was dependent upon the resources of the landed and commercial elite. His ambition, however, was to establish direct rule. Drawing upon both the religious (*al-imāma*) and functionary authority crafted at his court, his alliance with Aslam guaranteed a unique dual form of legitimacy. With this in hand, Hawdha established and unified a patrimonial monarchy in al-Yamāma. Once he had put his house in order, he fixed his gaze on the whole peninsula.

Hegemony

Centralization

Peace at home and war abroad created conditions favorable for al-Yamāma's expansion.[101] At the turn of the sixth century, the Arabian political scene was in turmoil.

One by one, Arab tribes wrested themselves from Lakhmid control. With the murder of ʿAmr b. Hind, the Usayyid clan of Tamīm had already begun to throw off the yoke of al-Ḥīra. However, the bloody reprisal cost them dearly. Soon thereafter followed the pillaging of the royal caravan en route to ʿUkāẓ, which sparked the protracted Fijār War that destabilized western Arabia. The year 602 C.E. marked a turning point. The last Lakhmid king, al-Nuʿmān III b. al-Mundhir IV (r. 580-602 C.E.), was deposed and put to death by the Sāsānid emperor, Khusraw II (r. 591-628 C.E.). In the meantime, total war broke out between the Byzantine and Persian Empires. Redirecting their resources, the Sāsānians minimized their garrison forces defending the Arabian frontier. Consequently, the Bakr b. Wāʾil tribal confederation defeated the Persians and their nomadic allies. This celebrated Battle of Dhū Qār (605 C.E.) signaled the beginning of the end for foreign rule. This left a power vacuum in Arabia. Enter al-Yamāma.

Diplomacy

The ensuing intertribal wars bled the nomads white. Although a member of the Bakrī confederacy, the Banū Ḥanīfa had committed no men at Dhū Qār. At the end of the day, al-Yamāma was unmatched in wealth, power, and resources. Fielding an army of ten thousand, Hawdha became the de facto ruler of central and northern Arabia.[102] Tribal chiefs directly dispatched delegations to al-Yamāma. Some paid homage, others tribute. In return, Hawdha recognized their rights to communal pastures and watering grounds. To seal the deal, tribes contracted diplomatic marriages. Worthy of note is Aslam's marriage into one of Makka's leading clans, ʿAbd Shams. After Aslam had imposed the moratorium on grain exports, famine and disease hit Makka hard.[103] In response, a Qurayshī deputation was dispatched to al-Yamāma to secure wheat vital to the survival of

Makka, the site of al-Raḥmān's shrine. After reaching a settlement that authorized limited shipments, the Qurayshī elite offered Aslam the hand of Ramla bt. al-Ḥārith.[104] An enduring alliance was born. Under the protection of Thumāma b. Uthāl, Yamāmī grain once again flowed into Makka.[105] Furthermore, commerce and peace led to conversion. Drawn to the prospect of instituting similar reforms in their tribes, villages, and cities back home, a number of Arab delegates embraced Islām and became Muslims.

Sphere of Influence

al-Yamāma's sphere of influence extended over three zones: direct, indirect, and independent (SEE MAP 2.1). Hawdha directly controlled those tribes in the immediate area of al-Yamāma. These included four Bakrī tribes, five Tamīm clans, the Numayr, and the Ka'b and some Kilāb of 'Āmir b. Ṣa'ṣa'a.[106] He exacted taxes from them and the agricultural population.[107] Village heads levied taxes in kind on irrigated and non-irrigated lands, while commercial taxes were primarily market dues (*maks*) collected by agents. Nomadic chiefs, on the other hand, gathered taxes in the form of sheep and camels from their kinsmen. In the second zone, Hawdha held indirect sway over tribes in al-Yamāma's vicinity, especially on the vast Najd plateau. To the north was the Usayyid clan of the 'Amr (of Tamīm b. Murr). To the southwest were two branches of the 'Āmir b. Ṣa'ṣa'a of Hawāzin: the Sa'd b. Bakr (who dwelt between al-Yamāma and al-Ḥijāz) and the 'Uqayl.[108] Not taxed in kind, these tribes paid with their services. In other words, they secured Yamāmī trade passing through their pasture districts. Lastly, among the independent tax-exempt tribes numbered the hostile Banū Sa'd clan of Tamīm and its eastern enemies, the 'Abd al-Qays. To the north dwelt the Banū Fazāra of Dhubyān b. Ghaṭafān and the remainder of the Bakr b. Wā'il.[109] Finally, to the west were the Thaqīf

of Hawāzin. Although politically independent, these and other outlying territories were within al-Yamāma's economic orbit. For example, neighboring on Najrān, the lucrative Yaman-Ctesiphon trade route ran right through al-Yamāma's al-Falaj district.[110] Hawdha's political centralization of Arabia engendered its twin corollaries: cultural and economic hegemony.
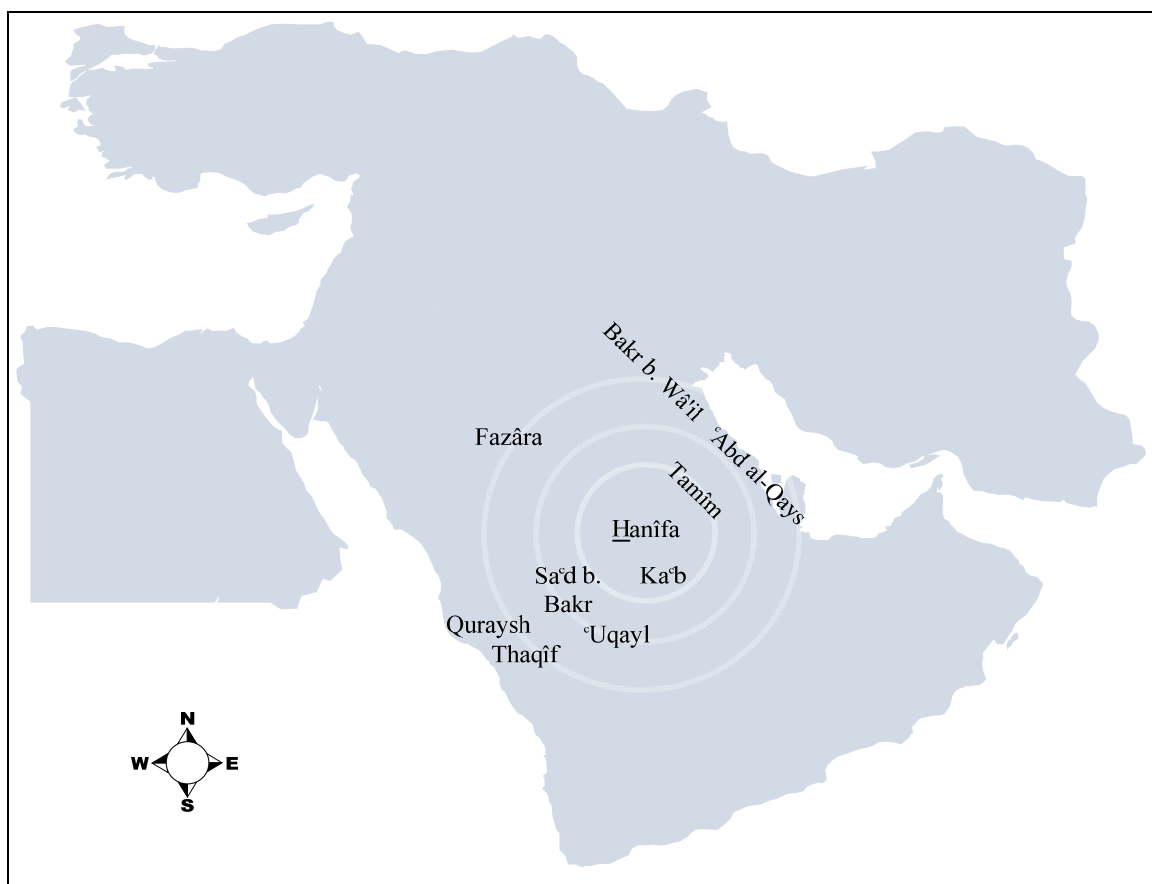
**Map 2.1: Sphere of Influence**

Monopoly

Fifty markets were scattered across Arabia.[111] Of these, thirteen had risen to prominence. At one time tied into a Persian-dominated trade network, these markets 'spiraled' throughout the peninsula.[112] Previously working through their Lakhmid intermediaries, imperial officials had exacted commercial taxes (*maks*), while the Tamīm confederacy

secured the circuit. However, the outbreak of war between Byzantium and Ctesiphon had destabilized the quadrant. As a result, trade experienced a marked decline.[113] With the loss of its Lakhmid sponsors, the rapidly disintegrating Tamīm confederacy was no match for the rising power of the Banū Ḥanīfa. Hard pressed on every side, the Persians now contented themselves with exercising nominal suzerainty in all but eastern Arabia. By 611 C.E., Yamāmī clients and agents flying the flag of Hawdha monopolized and transformed the old market cycle. Spiraling throughout the peninsula, the trade vortex ultimately funneled its goods into Hawdha's commercial capital, Ḥajr in al-Yamāma (SEE MAP 2.2).[114]

Vortex

The ancient site of Dūmat al-Jandal fed the market cycle.[115] Located in northern Arabia, Dūma was the shipping hub between the greater Near East and Arabia. Its well-fortified citadel was defended by the surrounding Banū Kalb. As the main depot for the storage of merchandise, its market hosted wholesale traders dealing in sizeable quantities of artisan goods, luxury items, and slaves. al-Mushaqqar in eastern Arabia was the next transit point along the network. Specializing in perfumes, this luxury market was policed by the 'Abd al-Qays and a clan of Tamīm. However, its location made it vulnerable to periodic attacks, especially after the waning of Persian power. Incessant hostilities further spoiled relations between the 'Abd al-Qays and the Banū Sa'd of Tamīm. From al-Mushaqqar, the trade sequence moved southeast to the third and fourth markets. On the gulf, these markets at Ṣuḥār and Dabā benefited from the Indian Ocean trade. The commercial cycle then swung downward around the great southern desert. Once at al-Shiḥr, merchants purchased textiles and fragrances. Further south was the port city of 'Adan, and to its

north lay Ṣanʿāʾ. Both were held by Yamanī-born Persian families, known as the Abnāʾ. These markets boasted an excellent selection of merchandise (e.g., spices, dyes). Swinging back to Rābiya, the cycle then shot north to the annual market of ʿUkāẓ. Held
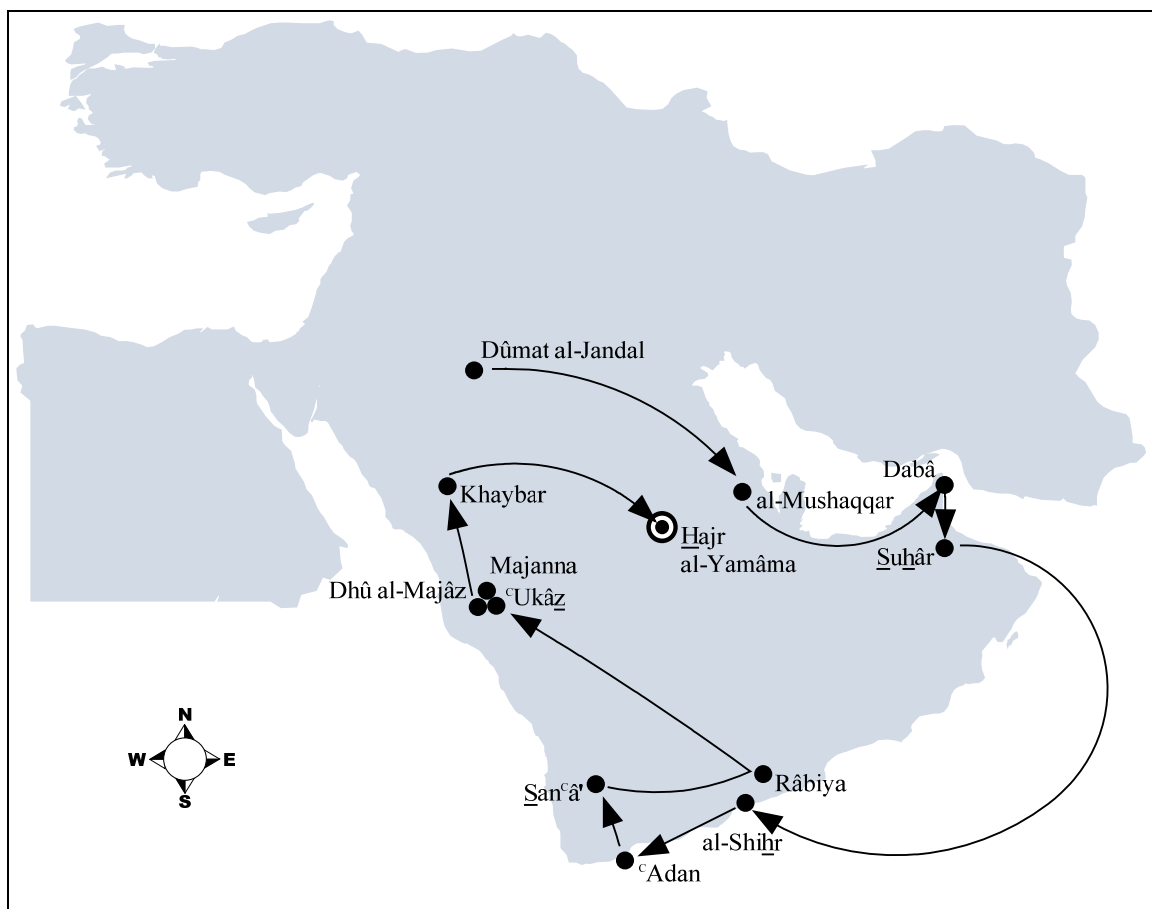
Map 2.2: Trade Vortex

between al-Ṭāʾif and Nakhla in al-Ḥijāz, the ʿUkāẓ market featured famed performances by poets and preachers who increasingly employed a Najdī-based poetic idiom.[116] The 'Orator of the Arabs,' Quss b. Sāʿida of Iyād, spread his message here. In addition to an active slave trade, this market was known for its famous leather goods.[117] More significantly, it was a site of negotiation where alliances were born. Moving westward, the circuit stopped at Majanna and Dhū al-Majāz. Thereafter, the cycle worked its way

upward to Khaybar. Accelerating downward into Najd, the market vortex culminated in Ḥajr, the eye of the storm. As its hegemons, Hawdha and Aslam were masters of all they surveyed.[118] However, the centralization of Arabia was 'uneven' and incomplete. Therefore, the struggle for a share in power persisted in the essential tension between the center and its periphery. In sum, this tension resulted in the paradox of early proto-Islāmic history. Aslam's reforms created prosperity in al-Yamāma while sowing the seeds of discontent in Makka.

[1] For the Kinda, see Makin, *Representing*, 117; and I. Shahid, s.v. Kinda, *EI²*.

[2] On the date of Kinda's flight, see Michael Bonner, "Commerce and Migration in Arabia before Islam: A Brief History of a Long Literary Tradition," in *Iranian Languages and Culture: Essays in Honor of Gernot Ludwig Windfuhr*, eds. Behrad Aghaei and M.R. Ghanoonparvar (Malibu and Costa Mesa: Mazda, 2012), 75.

[3] For "[t]he social order that had prevailed in the Arabian Peninsula for centuries…," see Joseph Kostiner, *The Making of Saudi Arabia 1916-1936: From Chieftaincy to Monarchical State* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1993), 3.

[4] For a comparative case of "…the profound crisis that Najdī society had been experiencing in the 18ᵗʰ century," see Abdulaziz al-Fahad, *The 'Imama vs. the 'Iqal: Hadari-Bedouin Conflict and the Formation of the Saudi State* (Italy: European University Institute, 2002), 4-24, esp. 6-10.

[5] For a tribe as "a political unit," see Kostiner, 3 f.

[6] For the "idiom of kinship," see Rudi Lindner, *Nomads and Ottomans in Medieval Anatolia* (Bloomington: Research Institute for Inner Asian Studies, Indiana University, 1983), 9. Lindner notes that "…in our reconstructions of the internal working of nomadic tribes of the past, we should give more emphasis to political factors and less to kinship models…" (Rudi Lindner, "What Was a Nomadic Tribe?" *CSSH* 24:4 (Oct., 1982): 696).

[7] For "Tribe and State" and a comparative case of retribalization in ancient Syro-Palestine, see Niels Lemche, "The History of Ancient Syria and Palestine: An Overview," in *Civilizations of the Ancient Near East*, vol. 2, eds. J. Sasson et al. (New York: Scribner, 1995), 1198 f.

[8] For a case in which Bakr b. Wā'il villagers "took up the nomadic life," see W. Caskel, s.v. Bakr b. Wā'il, *EI²*. For a comparative pre-modern Ottoman case, see Lindner, *Nomads*, 1-50, esp. 36.

[9] For the duration of Qatāda b. Maslama's rule, see Montgomery W. Watt, s.v. Ḥanīfa b. Ludjaym, *EI²*. Regarding ancient Syro-Palestine, Lemche notes that "[s]ince ancient times two political systems have been prominent in Syria and Palestine: decentralized tribal societies and centralized states. Contrary to what is often held by modern investigators, the inhabitants of Syria and Palestine had to make up their minds whether they wanted to be reckoned as members of a tribe or citizens of a state" (Lemche, 1198).

[10] For Qatāda b. Maslama, see Watt, s.v. Ḥanīfa, and al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 63. For a comparative early modern case of the Āl Saʿūd, see al-Fahad, 11.

[11] For post-Kinda politics in al-Yamāma, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 62 f. For a comparative pre-modern Ottoman case where "[i]t became Ottoman policy to protect, not to plunder, the towns of Bithynia as they fell one by one," see Lindner, "What Was a Nomadic Tribe?" 689-711, esp. 708.

[12] For a comparative pre-modern Ottoman case "[w]hen farmers submitted to Osman's chieftaincy, he left them in their former tenures and status," see Lindner, *Nomads*, 24 and 29.

[13] For the duration of this 'transformation,' cf. Lemche, 1199.

[14] For a comparative case of the emergence of "a territory-based definition" in 18ᵗʰ Najd, see al-Fahad, 8.

[15] For a comparative pre-modern Ottoman case, see Lindner, *Nomads*, 35.

[16] For example, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 53. For a comparative 19ᵗʰ century case at 'Unayza, see Donald Cole and Soraya Altorki, "Was Arabia Tribal? A Reinterpretation of the Pre-Oil Society," *JSAMES* 15:4 (1992): 71-87.

[17] For a comparative 19ᵗʰ century case at 'Unayza, see Cole and Altorki, 75.

[18] For 'urbanization' and 'ruralization,' see Norman Yoffee, "The Meaning of Cities in the Earliest States and Civilizations," in *Myths of the Archaic State: Evolution of the Earliest Cities, States, and Civilizations* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2005), 60 and passim.

[19] For a comparative 19ᵗʰ century case at 'Unayza, see Cole and Altorki, 78-82.

[20] For al-Falaj, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 24; and al-Hamdānī, *Geographie der arabischen Halbinsel*, ed. David Heinrich Müller (Amsterdam: Oriental Press, 1968), 45, 84, 149 f., 152, 154, 159 ff., 165 f., 168, 174, and 177. For the slave trade, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 46.

[21] "The people of al-Yamāma used to say: 'We surpass the people of the Earth in East and West by five features: by the beauty of our women, by the high quality of our wheat, by the sweetness of our dates, by the flavor of our meats (because of the quality of the Yamāmī pastures) and by the freshness of our water, which cleans the chest of phlegm'" (Translation adapted from Kister, "Struggle," 7). For al-Yamāma's economy, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 46-52. For a comparative ancient (6ᵗʰ century B.C.E.) case on 'land

use' in Attica, see Sara Forsdyke, "Land, Labor, and Economy in Solonian Athens," in *Solon of Athens: New Historical and Philological Approaches*, eds. Josine H. Blok et al. (Leiden: Brill, 2006), 347.

[22] "[I]t [viz. al-Yamāma] has more date palms and dried dates than al-Madīna and all of al-Ḥijāz" (Ibn Ḥawqal, *Kitāb Ṣūrat al-Arḍ*, ed. J.H. Kramers, vol. 2, 3rd ed., Bibliotheca Geographorum Arabicorum (Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1967), 31).

[23] For a comparative early Islāmic case on the 'agricultural sector,' see Andrew M. Watson, *Agricultural Innovation in the Early Islamic World: The Diffusion of Crops and Farming Techniques, 700-1100* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1983), 134 ff.

[24] "An example would be the 4,000 slaves working on Muʿāwiya's farms in al-Yamāma" (al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 45 f.).

[25] For a comparative ancient Mesopotamian case, see Yoffee, 61 f.

[26] For a comparative ancient Attic case, see W.J. Woodhouse, *Solon the Liberator: A Study of the Agrarian Problem in Attika in the Seventh Century* (New York: Octagon Books, Inc., 1965), 118. For "Mines and the Mining Industry" and "Industry" in al-Yamāma, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 49-52.

[27] For virtually free labor, see Michael G. Morony, "Landholding and Social Change: Lower al-ʿIrāq in the Early Islamic Period," in *Land Tenure and Social Transformation in the Middle East*, ed. Tarif Khalidi (Beirut: American University of Beirut, 1984), 211 and 218-219.

[28] For a comparative ancient Attic case of "the breakdown of traditional relations," see Forsdyke, 347.

[29] For a comparative pre-modern Ottoman case, see Lindner, *Nomads*, 36.

[30] The cottages were located west of the escarpment (al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 44). For a comparative pre-modern Ottoman case on the fate of the 'poor pastoral nomad,' see Lindner, *Nomads*, 66.

[31] For "Relations between the Tribes of al-Yamāma," see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 34.

[32] For Yamāmī labor in al-Madīna, see Kister, "Struggle," 7. For the migration of the Banū Ḥanīfa from al-Ḥijāz, see Watt, s.v. Ḥanīfa.

[33] Translation adapted from al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 109 f., and Makin, *Representing*, 211.

[34] Ibid.

[35] For a comparative pre-modern Andalusian case on "the strength of local interests," see Michael G. Morony, "Isolating Andalus," review of *The Rise and Fall of the Party Kings: Politics and Society in Islamic Spain, 1002-1086*, by David Wasserstein, *JAOS* 108:3 (1988): 445.

[36] For Musaylima's genealogy, see Kister, "Struggle," 2, and cf. Ibn al-Kalbī, vol. 1, 156. For the local boy or *ibn al-balad* ('son of the town'), see Richard T. Antoun, *Muslim Preacher in the Modern World: A Jordanian Case Study in Comparative Perspective* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1989), 64.

[37] For "The District of al-ʿĀriḍ," see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 20 ff., and G. Rentz, al-ʿĀriḍ, *EI²*. For Musaylima's birthplace (al-Haddār) and property, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 45, and Kister, "Struggle," 4. For Ubāḍ, see al-Hamdānī, 162.

[38] For Ḥanafī settlement in "the *wādī-s* of al-Yamāma," see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 15.

[39] For transit trade through al-ʿĀriḍ, see ibid., 21.

[40] For the political function of early Arabic poetry, see Roger Allen, *An Introduction to Arabic Literature* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2000), 68.

[41] For Musaylima's companions, see Makin, *Representing*, 239. For Muḥakkim's genealogy, see Ibn al-Kalbī, vol. 1, 156.

[42] For Hawdha and his genealogy, see Ibn al-Kalbī, vol. 1, 156, and al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 64.

[43] For divergent reports on Hawdha and the Tamīm incident(s), see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 63-64; al-Ṭabarī, *The Sāsānids, the Byzantines, the Lakmids, and Yemen*, vol. 5, trans. C.E. Bosworth (Albany: State University of New York Press, 1999), 289 ff. and 293; Bonner, "Commerce," 67; Spencer J. Trimingham, *Christianity among the Arabs in Pre-Islamic Times* (London: Longman, 1979), 284 f.; and Róbert Simon, *Meccan Trade and Islam: Problems of Origins and Structure* (Budapest: Akadémiai Kiadó, 1989), 38, 85, and 87. For "…the establishment of international trade routes making military control over tribal land necessary," in a comparative case in ancient Syro-Palestine, see Lemche, 1199.

[44] For Hawdha's title ('King of al-Yamāma'), see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 64 f.

[45] For "The Diadem," see Michael Lecker, "King Ibn Ubayy and the *Quṣṣāṣ*," in *Method and Theory in the Study of Islamic Origins*, ed. Herbert Berg (Leiden: Brill, 2003), 58; al-Ṭabarī, *Sāsānids*, 290; and Simon, 38.

[46] For the "Political Leaders of al-Yamāma," see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 73.

[47] For *raʾīsā al-yamāma*, see Kister, "Struggle," 15, and Watt, *M/Medina*, 133.

[48] For Arab warfare, see Leone Caetani, "The Art of War of the Arabs, and the Supposed Religious Fervour of the Arab Conquerors," in *The Expansion of the Early Islamic State*, ed. Fred M. Donner (Aldershot, Hants: Ashgate, 2008), 1-13. For Hawdha's preference for his sedentary subjects over the nomads, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 126 f. For the use of Persian forces to keep the nomads in check, see ibid. For a comparative pre-modern Ottoman case where a chief shifted to a sedentary military model, see Lindner, "What Was a Nomadic Tribe?" 708.

[49] Translation adapted from Makin, *Representing*, 204. For "Relations between the Tribes of al-Yamāma," see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 34.

[50] For agricultural land and irrigation in al-Yamāma, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 45-49.

[51] Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 53.

[52] Translation adapted from Makin, *Representing*, 217.

[53] For *al-dār*, see Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 551 and 553, Note 2. For "The Rhetoric of Religion: An Analysis of *raḥm* (Womb, Kinship, Compassion)," in a modern Jordanian comparative case, see Antoun, 87 and 106-125. For a comparative ancient Attic case of "Solon's Understanding of Dike in Light of the Polis Idea," see Joseph A. Almeida, *Justice as an Aspect of the Polis Idea in Solon's Political Poems: A Reading of the Fragments in Light of the Researches of New Classical Archaeology* (Leiden: Brill, 2003), 207-236.

[54] Translation adapted from Makin, *Representing*, 215 f., and Kister, "Struggle," 41.

[55] For *raḥm*, in a modern Jordanian comparative case, see Antoun, 87 and 106-125.

[56] For Yamāma bt. Murra, see al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 86. For ancient lore on al-Yamāma, see for example, al-Ṭabarī, *The Ancient Kingdoms*, vol. 4, trans. Moshe Perlmann (Albany: State University of New York Press, 1987), 152. For "The Name of al-Yamāma" and "The Boundaries of al-Yamāma," see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 10-13.

[57] Translation adapted from Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 637, and Makin, *Representing*, 185.

[58] For *al-dār*, see G. Marçais, s.v. *Dār*, *EI²*; and Makin, *Representing*, 39, 44, and 82. For "Significant Social Units" and "The Village as Community," in a modern Jordanian comparative case, see Antoun, 54-60. For *ḥaram* (sacred space), see Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 637 f. For the "royal reserve," in a comparative case on the Golden Horde, see Devin A. DeWeese, *Islamization and Native Religion in the Golden Horde: Baba Tükles and Conversion to Islam in Historical and Epic Tradition* (Pennsylvania: Pennsylvania State University Press, 1994), 541 and 544.

[59] For *raḥm* in a modern Jordanian comparative case, see Antoun, 106.

[60] For *al-Furqān*, see *Dabistán*, vol. 3, 4-5; Makin, *Representing*, 168 and 250-257; Fred M. Donner, "Quranic *Furqān*," *JSS* 52:2 (Autumn 2007): 279-300, esp. 280 (Q. 3:3); and Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 636-640.

[61] Translation adapted from Makin, *Representing*, 216.

[62] For Persian settlement in al-Yamāma, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 46. For civic pride, see Makin, *Representing*, 204 and 216.

[63] For the effects of famine and disease felt outside al-Yamāma, see for example, Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 70 f.

[64] Translation adapted from al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 93. For these verses, also see Makin, *Representing*, 214 f.

[65] For a comparative ancient Mesopotamian case on the "drama of citizenship," see Yoffee, 62.

[66] Translation adapted from Makin, *Representing*, 217.

[67] Translation adapted from al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 93. For these verses, also see Makin, *Representing*, 213.

[68] For a comparative ancient Attic case where "…Solon presents political dike as part of the permanent and immutable order of the polis," see Almeida, 211 f.; and Aviezer Tucker, "Miracles, Historical Testimonies, and Probabilities," *HT* 44:3 (Oct., 2005): 377.

[69] For *al-amr* (charismatic authority) and "The Rise of Religions," see Max Weber, *The Sociology of Religion*, trans. Ephraim Fischoff (Boston: Beacon Press, 1963), 2; Makin, *Representing*, 62-66; al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 87; and Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 52 ff. and 56. Weber notes that "…the specific qualities of Christianity as an ethical religion of salvation and as personal piety found their real nurture in the urban environment" (Weber, *Sociology*, 84 f.).

[70] For this "naturalistic orientation," see ibid., 2.

[71] *Dabistán*, vol. 3, 3 f.

[72] For examples of Musaylima's inverted miracles, see Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 55 f. For Musaylima's character, see Kister, "Struggle," 21 f.

[73] For a comparative pre-modern Ottoman case of scholars taking flight in search of patronage, see Lindner, *Nomads*, 6-7. For instability in al-Ḥīra, see A.F.L. Beeston and I. Shahid, s.v. al-Ḥīra, *EI²*. For "Christians of Arabia and the Gulf," see J.M. Fiey, s.v. Naṣārā, *EI²*. For Christianity, South Arabia, and the Musaylima movement, see Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 641, Note 1a-c; and Simon, 138, fn. 165.

[74] Translation adapted from Makin, *Representing*, 214 f.

[75] For *mulk al-samā'*, see Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 636 f.

[76] For 'inner-worldly asceticism' (*innerweltliche Askese*), see Weber, *Sociology*, 166 ff. For "The Holy Man Cult" and Musaylima's asceticism, see Trimingham, 233 ff. and 286.

[77] For these verses, see Makin, *Representing*, 217.

[78] For *furqān*, see Donner, "Quranic Furqān," 279-300.

[79] For *yawm dīnih[i]*, see Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 636 f.

[80] For Jibrīl, see Makin, *Representing*, 203.

[81] For the reconstructed *shahāda* and the *mu'adhdhin*, see Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 56; Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 639; Ibn Kathīr, *Life*, vol. 4, 69; and al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 107 and fn. 703.

[82] For the reconstructed *basmala*, see the introductory protocol in al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 87.

[83] See Yoffee, 62, for a comparative ancient Mesopotamian case where "[c]ities were not simply 'containers' for a new scale of social and economic and religious activities but were 'generative' of new offices and ranks…."

[84] For the function(s) of an apostle, see Hans Dieter Betz, s.v. Apostles, *ER²*. For 'Abd Allāh b. al-Nawwāḥa, see Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 639.

[85] Weber notes that "…a religious community arises in connection with a prophetic movement as a result of routinization (*Veralltäglichung*), i.e., as a result of the process whereby either the prophet himself or his disciples secure the permanence of his preaching and the congregation's distribution of grace, hence insuring the economic existence of the enterprise and those who man it, and thereby monopolizing as well the privileges reserved for those charged with religious functions" (Weber, *Sociology*, 60 f.). For *al-nubuwwa* and *al-imāma*, see al-Wāqidī, *Ridda* (1990), 108 f., and Makin, *Representing*, 66 and 202.

[86] For *al-imāma*, see al-Wāqidī, *Ridda* (1990), 108 f., and Makin, *Representing*, 202.

[87] For Hawdha's regal title (*sāḥib al-yamāma*), see Trimingham, 285, and al-Ṭabarī, *Ta'rīkh*, vol. 4, 1796.

[88] *Dabistán*, vol. 3, 2.

[89] For Musaylima's honorific title ('Abd al-Raḥmān), see Watt, s.v. Musaylima; M.J. Kister, s.v. Musaylima, *EQ*; and al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 112.

[90] For Quss b. Sā'ida, see Ch. Pellat, s.v. Ḳuss b. Sā'ida, *EI²*; Marek M. Dziekan, "Searching for the Origin of Things: On the *'ilm al-awā'il* in the Culture of the Arabic Middle Ages," *SAI* 4 (1996): 20-27; and B. Holmberg, s.v. Nasṭūriyyūn, *EI²*.

[91] For Umayya b. Abī al-Ṣalt, see J.E. Montgomery, s.v. Umayya b. Abī 'l-Ṣalt, *EI²*; and Al Makin, "Re-thinking Other Claimants to Prophethood: The Case of Umayya Ibn Abī Ṣalt," *JJIS* 48:1 (2010): 165-190.

[92] Weber notes that "[o]nce a religious community has become established it feels a need to set itself apart from alien competing doctrines…" (Weber, *Sociology*, 70).

[93] Weber notes that "[a] religion of salvation may very well have its origin within socially privileged groups" (Ibid., 101 ff.).

[94] Weber notes that "[a]s a rule, the aforementioned relationship between salvation religion and privileged classes changes its character as soon as the religion has reached lay groups…and certainly changes its character after it has reached into the disprivileged social strata…One characteristic element of this transformation, a product of the inevitable accommodation to the needs of the masses, may be formulated generally as the emergence of a personal, divine or human-divine savior as the bearer of salvation, with the additional consequence that the religious relationship to this personage becomes the precondition of salvation" (Ibid., 101 f.).

[95] For example, in the case of Musaylima, see *Dabistán*, vol. 3, 2.

[96] For "…Muslim as meaning a follower of a man named Maslama or Aslam…," see Margoloiuth, "On the Origin," 484.

[97] For "the Raḥmān's Ka'ba," see "Ibn Hishām's Notes," 727, Note 237. "Rajab was the sacred month of the Muḍar, Ramaḍān of the Rabī'a" (H. Kindermann, s.v. Rabī'a and Muḍar, *EI²*). For the three prescribed prayers (and the *qibla*), see Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 636 and 648, Note 2; *Dabistán*, vol. 3, 6-8; Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 57; and F.E. Peters, *Muhammad and the Origins of Islam* (Albany:

State University of New York Press, 1994), 115-116. For ritual and dietary prohibtions, see *Dabistán*, vol. 3, 10.

[98] For ʿAmr b. Hind, see A.J. Wensinck, s.v. ʿAmr b. Hind, *EI²*; and al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 65.

[99] For Maymūn al-Aʿshā, see W. Caskel, s.v. al-Aʿshā, *EI²*; al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 65; and Makin, *Representing*, 130.

[100] For legitimation, see Weber, "Politics as a Vocation," 33 f. and 36 f.

[101] Weber notes that "[t]he reception of the law formulated by Moses stimulated a period of expansion of the newly unified people in much the same way that the leveling of classes stimulated expansion in so many other cases, particularly in Athens and Rome" (Weber, *Sociology*, 50). For the Usayyid episode, see M.J. Kister, "al-Ḥīra: Some Notes on Its Relations with Arabia," *Arabica* 15:2 (June, 1968): 161. For the Fijār War, see J.W. Fück, s.v. Fidjār, *EI²*. For Khusraw II, see C.E. Bosworth, s.v. Parwīz, Khusraw (II), *EI²*. For the Battle of Dhū Qār, see Makin, *Representing*, 130.

[102] For the figure of ten thousand, see Simon, 85. For the figure of forty thousand, see al-Askar, *al-Yamāma*, 88, 113, and 127. For "topoi based on 'forty'," see Lawrence I. Conrad, "Abraha and Muḥammad: Some Observations Apropos of Chronology and Literary 'Topoi' in the Early Arabic Historical Tradition," *BSOAS* 50:2 (1987): 230 ff.

[103] For the effects of famine and disease felt in al-Ḥijāz, see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 70 f., and Fred M. Donner, "Mecca's Food Supplies and Muhammad's Boycott," *JESHO* 20:3 (1977): 258.

[104] For the name of Musaylima's bride, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 86; Makin, *Representing*, 94 f. and 114; Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 527; and Kister, s.v. Musaylima. For a later delegation to al-Yamāma, see al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 92.

[105] For "The District of Qarqarī," see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 22. "On missionaries, merchants, and mercenaries," see Max L. Stackhouse, s.v. Missions: Missionary Activity, *ER²*.

[106] For "The Demographic Map," see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 36 f., and Fred M. Donner, "The Bakr b. Wā'il and Politics in Northeastern Arabia on the Eve of Islam," *SI* 51 (1980): 17.

[107] For land tenure, irrigation, and agricultural production, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 45-49 and 126 f. For a comparative early Islāmic case on "General Levies and Customs-Duties," see Abū Yūsuf, *Taxation in Islām: Abū Yūsuf's Kitāb al-Kharāj*, vol. 3, trans. A. Ben Shemesh (Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1969), 130-133. For 'market dues' (*maks*), see W. Björkman, s.v. Maks, *EI²*. For a comparative pre-modern case on "Ottoman Regulations and Nomad Custom," see Lindner, *Nomads*, 51-74, esp. 61.

[108] For "Tribal Locations in the Sixth and Seventh Centuries C.E.," see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 109; H. Kindermann, s.v. ʿUqayl, *EI²*; W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. Hawāzin, *EI²*; and W. Caskel, s.v. ʿĀmir b. Ṣaʿṣaʿa, *EI²*. For a comparative Ottoman case on services rendered by tribes, see Daniel G. Bates, "The Role of the State in Peasant-Nomad Mutualism," *AQ* 44:3 (Jul., 1971): 121.

[109] For these tribes, see W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. Fazāra, *EI²*; J.W. Fück, s.v. Ghaṭafān, *EI²*; and W. Caskel, s.v. ʿAbd al-Qays, *EI²*.

[110] For "The District of al-Falaj," see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 24.

[111] "…[A]round fifty 'ancient markets of the Arabs'…" are noted by the geographer al-Hamdānī (d. 945 C.E.) (See Bonner, "Commerce," 74). See al-Hamdānī, 179-180.

[112] For the "markets of the Arabs," see Bonner, "Commerce," 74 and 87 f. For "…the close relations of the leaders of Tamīm with the kings of al-Ḥīra," see M.J. Kister "Mecca and Tamīm (Aspects of Their Relations)," *JESHO* 8:2 (Nov., 1965): 113.

[113] Musil notes that "[t]he discontinuance of its [viz. Dūmat al-Jandal's] fairs at the beginning of the seventh century is very unlikely" (Musil, *Arabia Deserta*, 533).

[114] For "…the waning of the influence of Tamīm…," see Kister, "al-Ḥīra," 144. For the *terminus ante quem* of 611 C.E., see Bonner, "Commerce," 76. "He [viz. Hawdha] was respected by the tribes to such an extent that it was enough to put the name 'Hawdha' on the flags of the caravans in order to ensure their safe passage" (Kister, "Struggle," 15). Map 2.2 based upon Michael Bonner, "'Time Has Come Full Circle': Markets, Fairs and the Calendar in Arabia before Islam," in *Scholars and Scholarship of the Islamic World: Studies in Islamic History, Law, and Thought in Honor of Professor Michael Allan Cook on his Seventieth Birthday*, eds. Asad Q. Ahmed, Michael Bonner and Behnam Sadeghi (Leiden: Brill, 2012), 50.

[115] For the "markets of the Arabs before Islam," see Bonner, "Commerce," 64-71.

[116] For the location of ʿUkāẓ, see "Ibn Hishām's Notes," 710, fn. 3. For the location of the 'two Nakhlas,' see Michael Lecker, *The Land of the B. Sulaym and Its Environs* [map], 1.6cm = 50km, in Lecker, *Banū Sulaym*, xiii; Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 193, fn. 1; and W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. Nakhla, *EI²*. Holes notes that "[a]

highly inflective poetic Arabic, or perhaps more accurately a poetic register, based principally on the speech of Najd, but no longer morphologically or syntactically identical to it, was in use throughout the whole of the area [viz. Arabia] for the composition and recitation of oral poetry and other forms of elevated diction" (Holes, 18).

[117] For the slave trade in 'Ukāẓ, see for example, M. Lecker, s.v. Zayd b. Ḥāritha, *EI²*; and W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. Khadīdja, *EI²*.

[118] For Hawdha as one of 'the kings of the horizons' (*mulūk al-afāq*), see al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 86. Watt notes that "Hawdhah was possibly the strongest man in central Arabia at this time" (Watt, *M/Medina*, 133). Chávez notes that "…the centralization of power is uneven in nature; the process of national homogenization is never complete and its limits are to an extent defined by the regional and local centres of power…" (Humberto G. Chávez, "The Centralization of Education in Mexico: Subordination and Autonomy," in *State and Society: The Emergence and Development of Social Hierarchy and Political Centralization*, ed. John Gledhill (London: Unwin Hyman, 1988), 321).

CHAPTER THREE
MIDDLE PROTO-ISLĀM

Reform Preacher

<u>Dissonance</u>

Makka lay on the outskirts of western Arabia. From its humble beginnings as a village of palm huts, it emerged as a trade entrepôt.[1] Outside the orbit of the imperial powers and their proxies, the Banū Quraysh specialized in the lucrative trafficking of goods and predatory lending. Shrewd business practices, along with their organized network, made Makka a financial center. As it developed into a city, settlements formed around its original core which was centered on al-Raḥmān's shrine (ka'ba). The influx of wealth and its unequal distribution further bifurcated the city. The inner Quraysh (i.e., the 'Abd Shams and Makhzūm clans) were the winners, while the outer Quraysh were the losers.[2] Although Makka's remote location provided protection, its barren valley exposed it to periodic famine and disease. Dependent upon grain shipments, the Banū Quraysh were at the mercy of their suppliers. Therefore, Makka was not impervious to fluctuations abroad. With the fall of the Kinda, the intervening four decades of instability in al-Yamāma had rippled throughout al-Ḥijāz. With political instability, al-Yamāma's agricultural output plummeted. Outlying areas in western Arabia suffered most. Year in and year out, famine and plague were daily realities. Syrian supplies provided temporary relief. However, with the escalating Persian-Byzantine war, these grain supplies were requisitioned northward.[3] This threatened the south with further waves of famine and suffering. In Makka, there was a return to religion.

Impurity

Disaster befell Makka. Whereas piety meant observance, the violation of taboos constituted a transgression against the cult god, in other words, a sin.[4] Ancient ritual taboos were reintroduced among the well-to-do Quraysh whose leaders served as temple priests. To maintain their ritual purity, these elite Quraysh abstained from certain foods, limited their marriage circle, and reinstituted pilgrimage rites. These ostensibly pious acts served to distinguish social classes within Makka and moreover, created a zealous table-community (*ḥums*) that facilitated political alliances between neighboring and related tribes (*īlāf*).[5] Linked to these taboos was the shark (*quraysh*), the Banū Quraysh's eponymous tribal totem and traditional symbol of kinship and brotherhood. Housing the gods of their allies, the Makkan shrine was indicative of their expanding network. Their cult center, in turn, facilitated trade and relations beyond the intra-tribal level. Commerce and cult were interlocked. As the source of Makka's wealth and local power, the shrine was ultimately the city's origin.

But then disaster struck again. The return of famine and plague signaled a failure to appease the cult god. Rampant among these hardest hit Quraysh – the young, the weak, and the poor – desperately sought an end to their suffering. Sin and piety gave way to an ethical understanding of the divine, a monotheism.[6] Soon some members of the Banū Quraysh refused to partake in the pagan cult. Among these was Zayd b. ʿAmr, a sage who proscribed female infanticide, renounced the idols, and publicly preached the worship of the one god:

> To the heavenly king – there is no deity beyond him
> And no lord can draw near him.
> Beware, O men, of what follows death![7]

Notions of impurity gave way to a sense of societal imbalance. The god of commerce gave rise to a god of justice as guarantor of the fair 'circulation' of goods among the strong and the weak, the rich and the poor.[8] Before long, a reform preacher came to warn of other-worldly judgment and retribution.

Liminal Zone

Born in a famine year that took his father's life, Amīn b. 'Abd Allāh (d. 632 C.E.) was orphaned at an early age.[9] Put in the care of Ḥalīma bt. Abī Dhu'ayb, Amīn spent his youth in the liminal zone within al-Yamāma's indirect sphere of influence. Dependent upon the sedentary cult, Ḥalīma's clan of Sa'd b. Bakr frequented Makka to the west.[10] Driven by their need for provisions to sustain life, they also made their way east to al-Yamāma. The son of the steppe, Amīn was exposed early on to the egalitarian ethos of desert society centered on co-liability, codependency, and martial prowess.[11] Following his days as a shepherd, he was taken in by his relatives who were engaged in commerce. In Makka, he experienced an acute culture shock. The rich towered above the poor, traditional bonds of kinship were cast aside, and profit carried the day. At the bottom of the barrel, his worldview was turned upside down.

While attending the trade fair at 'Ukāẓ, Amīn was drawn to the sermon of an eccentric preacher perched atop a she-camel:

> O people, he who lives dies
> And he who dies passes away.
> Whatever is coming is coming,
> Dark night and the heaven of the zodiac,
> And stars that shine,
> Seas that accumulate,
> And sons and daughters,
> Fathers and mothers,
> The one gone,
> The one coming,
> That in the heaven there is a passage
> And that there is on earth a message.[12]

Quss b. Sā'ida's words resonated with him, an orphaned outcast and firsthand witness to the fragility of life and the transience of this world. Turning away from the social chaos of his day, Amīn the religious virtuoso took upon himself the life of a world-rejecting ascetic.[13] Resigning himself to a cave in Mount Ḥirā' on the outskirts of Makka, he lived a life of solitude and contemplation. Constant exposure to poor passersby prevented him from escaping the mundane world and its ills.[14] For this reason, he returned to the city to eke out a meager living, while occasionally retreating to the relative solace of Mount Ḥirā'.

Warner

Although the fortunes of the petty merchant changed when he married into wealth, his experiences in Makka and abroad 'reawakened' a keen sense of justice and balance.[15] On one occasion, Amīn heard the oracle:

> O you, enfolded in your mantle,
> Arise and warn!
> Glorify your lord,
> Purify your inner self,
> And cast off all fear.[16]

The religious virtuoso had become an inner-worldly ascetic, 'an instrument of god.'[17] He took up the vocation of a local reform preacher warning that judgment was close at hand. He implored his fellow Makkans:

> As for the orphan, oppress not,
> As for the beggar, refuse not,
> As for thy lord's favor, proclaim.[18]

He publicly castigated the wealthy naysayers:

> Woe to every slanderer, scoffer,
> Who gathers wealth and counts it,
> Thinking wealth will make him immortal.[19]

Lamenting their fate, he declaimed in a single incisive stroke:

Nay! He will surely be thrown into the grain grinder (*al-ḥuṭama*).[20]

Far from being a harbinger of doom, he came bearing the message of salvation. To correct Makka's imbalance, he called for the proper distribution of goods. In addition to a communal 'political salvation,' he also preached individual salvation through personal piety by means of fasting, vigils, and prayer (accompanied by ritual ablutions).[21] He envisioned a coming world order in which the righteous "…shall recline on jeweled couches face to face, and there shall wait on them youths with bowls, pitchers, and a cup of purest wine (that will neither pain their heads nor take away their reason); with fruits of their own choice and flesh of fowl that they relish."[22]

Call for Social Justice

As Makka expanded into a full-fledged city, the class divide widened. The rich and powerful 'Abd Shams and Makhzūm clans dominated the inner city and its shrine, while the remaining eight poor clans were scattered in makeshift huts strewn across the crowded, squalid outer city.[23] Seven middling and lower classes emerged in Makka: caravan merchants, middlemen, debtors, clients, wage earners, mercenaries, and slaves. The wealthy mercantile class used patronage as a mechanism to tighten its grip on the rebounding population. In this system, a patron took under his wing a weak client. Dependent upon the patron for protection, the client-patron relation was a bond of subservience. In time, thirteen client groups were tied to the two most powerful Qurayshī clans.

Weight

Amīn drew his followers and companions largely from the disenfranchised and the middling class.[24] Among his early followers were a merchant, a youngster, and a slave.

The petty merchant Abū Bakr b. Abī Quḥāfa (known as ʿAtīq, 'freedman') was his confidant. The youngster whom Amīn took in during a famine was ʿAlī (d. 661 C.E.), the son of Abū Ṭālib, head of the Banū Hāshim clan. The slave purchased at ʿUkāẓ by Ḥakīm b. Ḥizām was Zayd b. Ḥāritha al-Kalbī (d. 629 C.E.) who belonged to Amīn's devoted wife and business partner, Khadīja bt. Khuwaylid (d. 619 C.E.). Among those who later sided with Amīn was the middleman ʿUmar b. al-Khaṭṭāb (d. 644 C.E.), the nephew of the outspoken sage Zayd b. ʿAmr. Amīn's movement also attracted alienated Makkan elites. Notable was his son-in-law, ʿUthmān b. ʿAffān (d. 656 C.E.), a prosperous younger member of the powerful ʿAbd Shams clan that was vying with the Makhzūm for supremacy.

Ultimately, Makka's societal structure became unstable under the weight of human-slavery, wage-slavery, and debt-slavery. In addition, the clientele system put an enormous burden upon the elite masters. When periodic famine struck, the dependent population looked to their patrons. This placed the Makkan leaders and priests in a precarious and potentially volatile situation. Makka was one failed food shipment away from civil strife.[25] In order to shore up their position, the Banū Quraysh opened diplomatic channels with the region's leading supplier of cereals, al-Yamāma. The ʿAbd Shams clan secured steady but limited grain shipments through a marriage alliance between Aslam and Ramla bt. al-Ḥārith. This ensured the inner Quraysh's hold over the city center and its politics. This elite commodity, however, was accessible only to the dominant clans. The poor outer Quraysh remained exposed to famine.[26] The elites, nonetheless, enjoyed virtual immunity, as they resided around the shrine's sacred space (ḥaram) where violence was sacrilege.

Measure

Rich Makkans were given to conspicuous consumption. Public displays of generosity and largess purposefully redistributed wealth to the lower strata, thereby creating obligations and bonds of loyalty. However, these escalating contests of prestige took a destructive turn.[27] In imitation of the proverbial Ḥātim al-Ṭā'ī, hundreds of camels would needlessly be slaughtered. Amīn condemned these unethical displays of wealth which tore apart the civic bonds uniting Makka:

> I swear by this city,
> You a citizen of this city,
> And by the [ties binding] parent and child.
> Surely we have created man to toil.
> Does he think that none has power over him?
> 'I have squandered vast riches!' he boasts.
> Does he think that no one sees him?
> Have we not given him two eyes,
> And a tongue, and two lips,
> And shown him the two paths?
> But he would not take the high road.[28]

Echoing the sentiment that the city is a functional whole, he cautioned his Makkan audience about ingratitude:

> Indeed, man transgresses all bounds,
> Thinking himself self-sufficient.
> Surely to your lord all things return.[29]

He mused aloud:

> Do they never reflect on the camels, and how they were created?
> The heaven, how it was raised on high?
> The mountains, how they were set down?
> The earth, how it was made flat?[30]

More and more, his sermons focused upon the gratitude owed to the creator god. The successful Makkan merchants, he felt, should show thanks "[f]or Quraysh's political and commercial network (*īlāf*), [and] their protection of the summer and winter caravans."[31] He admonished:

Therefore let them worship the lord of this house
Who fed them in the days of famine and shielded them from all peril.[32]

Moreover, he preached that when ordering the world, the just creator:

Raised the heaven on high and set the balance of all things,
That you might not transgress the balance.
Give just weight and full measure.[33]

Amīn's words met with strong resistance among the Makkan aristocracy. As a countermeasure, they attempted to lure him to their side by offering him a place in their ranks. These aristocrats temporarily succeeded in bending him to their will.[34] However, 'Uthmān b. Maẓ'ūn al-Jumaḥī (d. 624/5 C.E.) stepped in. He greatly strengthened Amīn's hand against the Makkan elite.

Scattered across al-Ḥijāz were steadily growing communities of Aslam's followers. Noteworthy among these were the actual Qurayshī Muslims active in Makka before Amīn's public preaching.[35] Their leader was Ibn Maẓ'ūn.[36] In line with Aslam's laws, Ibn Maẓ'ūn forbade intoxication, practiced monogamy, and observed abstinence after his wife bore him a son. Centered on the worship of al-Raḥmān, al-Yamāma's religion attracted some affluent members of Makka's aristocracy. Among Ibn Maẓ'ūn's followers were Abū 'Ubayda b. al-Jarrāḥ, 'Abd al-Raḥmān b. 'Awf, Abū Salama b. 'Abd al-Asad, and 'Ubayda b. al-Ḥārith b. al-Muṭṭalib.[37] Through the intermediacy of Abū Bakr, Ibn Maẓ'ūn and Amīn soon made common cause and formed an uneasy coalition.[38] Amīn then publicly disclosed the name of the 'heavenly king': al-Raḥmān.[39] His announcement caused a great stir among the Makkans both high and low. He touched a raw nerve with the mention of al-Raḥmān.

Balance

Although partially lifted, the continued Yamāmī ban on grain exports wreaked havoc on Makka. Prices rose to exorbitant levels. As the exclusive supplier of grain to the Qurayshī elite, Aslam was seen as the real culprit behind this heinous crime against the poor. He was known to the Makkans as 'Raḥmān of al-Yamāma.'[40] By naming al-Raḥmān as the 'heavenly king,' Amīn had made an egregious error. The crowds dissipated. Whenever they encountered Amīn in public, they derided him, freely declaring their "…unbelief at the mention of al-Raḥmān."[41] Perplexed, he observed: "When it is said to them, 'Prostrate yourselves (in adoration) before al-Raḥmān,' they say, 'What is al-Raḥmān? Shall we prostrate ourselves before that which you command us?'"[42] "Raḥmān," they remarked, "is merely a shaman (*kāhin*) in al-Yamāma."[43] Holding his ground, Amīn persisted, maintaining that al-Raḥmān "…is my lord and there is no deity but he; in him do I trust and to him do I turn."[44] The Makkans taunted Amīn and his companions, calling them treacherous 'Aslamers,' that is Muslims.[45] Amīn's companions countered by insisting that they were Mu'mins, literally, followers of Amīn.

Amīn's movement was too politically sensitive to escape the notice of those in power. Uncertain over how to proceed, the Banū Quraysh immediately dispatched 'Uqba b. Abī Mu'ayṭ and al-Naḍr b. al-Ḥārith to Yathrib (al-Madīna) in order to consult the Ḥanafī diaspora community residing there. Antagonistic towards Amīn, both couriers related: "We have come to you for a momentous matter, because a young, poor, vulgar, and orphaned youth has been repeating a splendid thing. He has claimed that he is the herald of al-Raḥmān. Indeed, the only al-Raḥmān we know is the one of al-Yamāma."[46] Amīn was playing with fire. His sermons had the potential to jeopardize the delicate relations between Makka and al-Yamāma. In other words, he posed an existential threat

to the Makkan elite. With the crowds thinning out and pressure mounting, he took the most prudent course: "Pray to 'the deity' (*allāh*) *or* pray to al-Raḥmān; whichever [name] you call upon, to him belong the most beautiful names."[47] Amīn and his fledgling Mu'min movement were safe for the moment.

Opposition

<u>Makkan Neutrality</u>

The Makkan elite were caught in a bind. By bringing harm to Amīn and his Muslim followers, they risked a potential confrontation with al-Yamāma. On the other hand, by sitting on their hands, they risked the infiltration of an egalitarian ideology inimical to their vested interests. Walking a tightrope, they resolved to remain neutral. However, when rank and file members of the elite deserted to Amīn's camp, the Makkan merchants resorted to stronger measures. Upon the death of al-Walīd b. al-Mughīra around 615 C.E., power changed hands. At the head of the indomitable Makhzūm clan now stood Abū al-Ḥakam (ca. 570-624 C.E.), the son of a Ḥanẓalī Tamīmī woman. Without recourse to physical violence, he resorted to 'structural violence.'[48]

Damage

Abū al-Ḥakam imposed a trade blockade on Amīn and his kinsmen, the Banū Hāshim and Banū al-Muṭṭalib.[49] Almost immediately, Abū 'Utba and his dependents defected from the Banū Hāshim. Amīn pleaded with Abū 'Utba to reconsider, promising him infinitely greater rewards in the afterlife. Abū 'Utba replied that "'Amīn promises me things which I do not see. He alleges that they will happen after my death; what has he put in my hands after that?' Then he blew on his hands (*yanfukh^u fī yadayhⁱ*) and said, 'May you perish. I can see nothing in you [viz. his hands] of the things which Amīn

says.'"[50] Shortly thereafter, the Makkan elite formalized their relationship with Abū ʿUtba who wed the sister of Abū Sufyān (d. ca. 650/1 C.E.). Her brother was head of the ʿAbd Shams clan that was in league with the Makhzūm. Amīn reviled both Abū ʿUtba – Abū Lahab ('Father of Flame') – and his Sufyānī bride in a scathing attack:

> May the hands of Abū Lahab perish! May he himself perish!
> Nothing shall his wealth and gains avail him.
> He shall be burnt in a flaming fire,
> And his wife, laden with firewood,
> Shall have a rope of fiber round her neck![51]

This diatribe was to no avail; the ban continued uninterrupted. It effectively released debtors from repaying their loans to Amīn and his companions. Abū Bakr's already modest capital dwindled further from forty to five thousand dirhams.[52] The boycott restricted trade and marriage with Amīn's kinsmen. However, the commercial ban was bypassed on a regular basis by close kin and allies who devised clever means of delivering foodstuffs and clothing. On one occasion, Abū al-Bakhtarī al-Asad even hampered an attempt by Abū al-Ḥakam – Abū Jahl ('Father of Ignorance') – to stop a flour delivery to Amīn's wife.[53]

Refuge

Although relatively unsuccessful, the boycott nonetheless further damaged Amīn's credibility as leader of the joint Mu'min-Muslim movement.[54] His activities had already placed the Qurayshī Muslims in the line of fire. In response, Ibn Maẓʿūn reasserted his own authority and shepherded his flock to safety.[55] Around 615 C.E., eighty-three Qurayshī Muslim men fled with their women and children to their brethren and coreligionists in al-Yamāma.[56] In al-ʿIrḍ district of western al-Yamāma resided a long established Qurayshī community of miners.[57] Situated near the Qarqarī district, these Quraysh were neighbors of Thumāma b. Uthāl, chief of the nomadic Banū Ḥanīfa.

Among the refugees were ʿUthmān b. ʿAffān and his wife Ruqayya, and Amīn's cousin Jaʿfar, the son of Abū Ṭālib. Amīn and the remaining Muʾmins, however, stayed behind. The Makkan merchant elite panicked when word of the flight reached them. They frantically dispatched ʿAmr b. al-ʿĀṣ b. Wāʾil al-Sahmī and ʿAbd Allāh b. Abī Rabīʿa to retrieve the fugitives.[58] In any case, this effort was in vain. Hawdha b. ʿAlī had already granted protection to the Qurayshī Muslims at the request of Jaʿfar b. Abī Ṭālib. Summoned to Hawdha's court, Jaʿfar addressed 'the king of the horizons' (*malik al-afāq*):

> O king,[59] we were an uncivilized people (*ahl al-jāhiliyya*), worshipping idols, eating carrion, committing abominations, breaking natural ties, treating guests badly, and our strong devoured our weak. Thus we were until god sent us a herald whose lineage, truth, trustworthiness, and clemency we know. He summoned us to acknowledge god's unity and to worship him and to renounce the stones and images which we and our fathers formerly worshipped. He commanded us to speak the truth, be faithful to our engagements, mindful of the ties of kinship and kindly hospitality, and to refrain from crimes and bloodshed. He forbade us to commit abominations and to speak lies, and to devour the property of orphans, to vilify chaste women. He commanded us to worship god alone and not to associate anything with him, and he gave us orders about prayer, almsgiving, and fasting (enumerating the commands of Islām)…Therefore our people attacked us…So when they got the better of us, treated us unjustly and circumscribed our lives, and came between us and our religion, we came to your country, having chosen you above all others. Here we have been happy in your protection, and we hope that we shall not be treated unjustly while we are with you, O king.[60]

When he heard this heartfelt appeal, Hawdha denied the Makkan extradition request and granted the refugees asylum. Empty-handed, ʿAmr and his companion hastened to Makka. The Qurayshī Muslims remained in al-Yamāma for six years. Among those who repatriated early on was Ibn Maẓʿūn who sought to return to his affluent Qurayshī Muslim followers still residing in Makka.[61] Sheltered by their wealth, these followers of his had had no need to flee Makka. When he arrived in Makka from Hawdha's court, he witnessed firsthand the deteriorating situation of his coreligionists, the Muʾmins.

Disgusted, he immediately cast off the protection of the dominant Makhzūm clan by stating defiantly that "…I am under the protection of one who is stronger and more powerful than you…."[62] Soon thereafter, he and Amīn buried the hatchet; the two leaders resolved to coordinate their efforts and presented a united front.[63]

Although Abū al-Ḥakam and Abū ʿUtba doggedly pushed on with the boycott, it came under heavy fire from the rest of the Banū Quraysh. In a sermon based on a dream vision, Amīn divined the outcome of his struggle against these two wealthy elites (the 'Father of Folly' and the 'Father of Flame'): "I saw on my arms two bracelets of gold which I disliked so I blew on them (*fa-nafakhtuhumā*) and they flew away."[64] This soon came to pass. A group of leaders sympathetic to Amīn's clan banded together to challenge the Makhzūm-ʿAbd Shams monopoly of power in Makka. The ban was lifted, but even so, events took a turn for the worse. In 619 C.E., Abū Ṭālib, the leader of the Banū Hāshim and Amīn's protector, passed away. He was succeeded by his brother who was none other than Abū ʿUtba, brother-in-law of Abū Sufyān and a sworn enemy of Amīn.[65] Shortly after assuming power, Abū ʿUtba renounced Amīn. Left defenseless, Amīn scrambled.

Exodus

For nearly three years after the death of Abū Ṭālib, Amīn desperately searched for another patron and protector.[66] Suffering from arrested development, Amīn's movement came to a complete standstill and lost its appeal. No longer an imminent threat, he was left to rot. Having exhausted all options in Makka, he looked elsewhere to broaden his reach. He launched a revitalization campaign directed at nearby sedentary and nomadic populations.

Scramble

Going from place to place, Amīn made his rounds. al-Ṭā'if was his first stop. In the past, this self-sustaining town had proven fertile ground for fomenting dissent against their Makkan neighbors. However, following the Fijār War (ca. 580 C.E.), the Banū Quraysh under the leadership of Ḥarb b. Umayya (of ʻAbd Shams) had subjugated the Banū Thaqīf (the sedentary branch of the Hawāzin) to serve Makkan commercial interests.[67] In fact, rich Makkan families summered in al-Ṭā'if. Two competing factions dominated al-Ṭā'if and its politics: the weak Aḥlāf and the stronger Banū Mālik. The Aḥlāf had allied with the Qurayshī Makhzūm clan to strengthen their hand against their rivals. Upon his arrival, Amīn pitched his bold plan to the Aḥlāf. He proposed to shake off the shackles that bound them to the Banū Quraysh. Meeting a cold reception and outright resistance, Amīn had grievously erred in tipping his hand. The Aḥlāf unceremoniously ran him out of town. Publicly humiliated, he returned to Makka a disgraced man. Bruised but not beaten, he kept his eye out for potential hosts.

During the annual market at ʻUkāẓ, Amīn delivered his public sermons and made for the tents of the Arabs. He approached the nomadic branch of the Hawāzin, the Banū ʻĀmir b. Ṣaʻṣaʻa. One of their number candidly replied to his offer: "I suppose you want us to protect you from the Arabs with our breasts and then if god gives you victory someone else will reap the benefit! Thank you, No!"[68] Other tribes such as the Banū Kinda of Ḥaḍramawt and the Banū Kalb politely declined. Amīn crossed the line when he stepped into the tent of Thumāma, chief of the Banū Ḥanīfa nomads. Condemned by Hawdha and Aslam to waste away on the outskirts of al-Yamāma, these nomads waited in the wings for the opportune moment to strike against them. Making a serious miscalculation, Amīn stood in their midst and preached their oppressor's sedentary

ideology. They treated him badly for his audacity. He was fortunate to come back in one piece. From this experience, he gained a practical insight into imperial politics: al-Yamāma had a fifth column. The sum of these unsavory encounters soured his attitude towards the Banū Ḥanīfa, Banū Thaqīf, and Banū Quraysh, all three of whom he bitterly cursed.[69]

On one occasion, a delegation travelled from Yathrib to Makka in order to explore the prospect of an alliance. Back home in Yathrib, the clan of al-Aws was fighting a bloody feud against their Banū Qayla kinsmen, al-Khazraj.[70] A food shortage had sparked this conflict. Although an oasis, the acreage of tillable land in Yathrib was limited. As a result, it depended on grain imports, largely from al-Yamāma.[71] However, peace and stability there had resulted in a demographic boom. To sustain its growing population, al-Yamāma had increasingly begun to import, rather than export grain supplements from surrounding areas. This extraction of resources intensified during bad harvests in al-Yamāma.[72] Lucrative profits guaranteed the flow of grain into al-Yamāma's trade vortex, bypassing local markets. Moreover, the Yathribīs faced starvation with Aslam's ongoing embargo on cereal sales. Left in the lurch, Yathrib's nomadic clans turned against the sedentary population. In response, the farmers fled with their families to the village citadels that were primarily designed to defend against predatory raids. As a countermeasure, the sedentary population allied with one nomadic clan for protection against another. This social cleavage in Yathrib spawned two major political alignments, al-Aws and al-Khazraj, each resorting to land grabbing in a desperate act of survival. This conflict reached a stalemate after the Battle of Buʿāth in 617 C.E.[73] Bled white by incessant violence, neither side had the upper hand. al-Aws

sought to turn the tide by forming an alliance with Quraysh's elite. When the disenfranchised Amīn offered al-Aws his counsel, he was met with a sharp rebuff. From this whole affair, Amīn became aware that all was not well in Yathrib. At a market in al-'Aqaba (located between Makka and Minā), he came upon a party of al-Khazraj. These war-sick deserters enthusiastically embraced his offer: "We have left our people, for no tribe is so divided by hatred and rancor as they. Perhaps god will unite them through you. So let us go to them and invite them to this religion of yours; and if god unites them in it, then no man will be mightier than you."[74] al-Khazraj hoped Amīn could do for Yathrib what Aslam had done for al-Yamāma.

Subterfuge

Amīn mulled it over, considering all the available options. Yathrib meant a clean slate, a fresh start. On the other hand, he contemplated joining those Qurayshī Muslim and Mu'min refugees who continued to prosper in al-Yamāma: "I have dreamt that, indeed, I am migrating from Makka to the land where there are date-palms; [this vision] comes and goes and it is Yamāma...."[75] But he thought better of it. In al-Yamāma, the Mu'min movement risked losing its independence and cohesion. He was also reluctant to hand over the reins of power to Ibn Maẓ'ūn. Rather than al-Yamāma, Amīn divined the ordained destination: "...it was the city of Yathrib, and in my dream I saw that I was swinging a sword...."[76] Thereafter, he commenced negotiations with the Yathribīs. He held two major rounds of talks with them at al-'Aqaba. After a party of al-Khazraj became Mu'mins, they went back to Yathrib, promising to return the following year. In the first round of talks in 621 C.E., a joint party of al-Khazraj and al-Aws swore their allegiance to Amīn.[77] They then headed back to Yathrib accompanied by Amīn's agent

and scout, Muṣ'ab b. 'Umayr. Left out of the talks, Ibn Maẓ'ūn saw this as a deliberate

attempt to circumvent his authority. He had to beat Amīn at his own game. He straight

away vacated his family home in Makka and hastened to Yathrib.[78] Aslam's religion had

already taken root in Yathrib prior to the Battle of Bu'āth.[79] His task greatly simplified,

Ibn Maẓ'ūn succeeded in converting a substantial portion of southern Yathrib. The

Yathribī Muslims boasted about their chief, al-Barā' b. Ma'rūr:

> To us belongs the man who was the first to pray
> Facing al-Raḥmān's shrine (*ka'ba*) between the sacred sites.[80]

In the fertile village of Qubā' located in Upper (southern) Yathrib, Ibn Maẓ'ūn built

himself an independent power base. These Yathribī Muslims provided his only leverage

against Amīn.

At the next annual fair, Muṣ'ab returned with seventy-five Yathribīs.[81] This

second round of negotiations established Amīn's nominal primacy in Yathrib. In a call to

arms, these Yathribīs pledged to defend him with their lives. The leaders of Banū

Quraysh learned of his plan to take refuge in Yathrib. They therefore approached him

and the Yathribīs. Stalling for time, Abū al-Ḥakam proposed to postpone their

departure.[82] According to his terms, they were free to go after a specified interval of time

had elapsed. The Yathribīs refused to be diverted from their purpose. These battle-

hardened men threatened to unleash war by striking down the fairgoers. At any rate,

Amīn dissuaded them. He then acquiesced to Abū al-Ḥakam's demands. A handful of

Yathribī representatives remained behind to guarantee that the Banū Quraysh honored

their half of the agreement.[83] Amīn, however, suspected treachery. The Banū Quraysh

redoubled their efforts against his followers. Some fled, while others committed

apostasy.[84] After foiling an attempt on his life, Amīn stealthily escaped to Yathrib.

Resistance

<u>The Mu'min Movement</u>

Surrounded by hills to the north and south, lava flows to the east and west, Yathrib was situated on a plain (*jawf*) crisscrossed by rain-fed river beds (*wādī-s*) and wells.[85] Sprawling across this fertile plain were numerous defended villages, each outfitted with its own citadel. Over a hundred citadels dotted the landscape. The name 'Yathrib' originally designated only the northwest quarter, but eventually, it was applied to the whole settlement. Largely concentrated in the south, oasis agriculture in Yathrib centered on date palms with limited cereal cultivation. Feuding clans – not tribes – dominated Yathrib. Although non-belligerency treaties allowed farming to continue, intermittent violence disrupted planting and irrigation.[86] Before the Battle of Bu'āth in 617 C.E., the clan of al-Khazraj had forged an alliance with the sedentary Banū Naḍīr and Banū Qaynuqā'. Their foes were the al-Aws clan and the Banū Qurayẓa, a formidable sedentary force.[87] During the battle, al-Aws then formed a temporary coalition with the Banū Naḍīr and Banū Qurayẓa. After Bu'āth, the Banū Naḍīr realigned with al-Khazraj whose leader was 'Abd Allāh b. Ubayy (d. 631 C.E.), chief of the Ḥublā b. Ghanm b. 'Awf b. al-Khazraj clan. He commanded the unassailable fortress of Muzāḥim, strategically located in the heart of Yathrib.[88] Cold and calculating, he had prudently abstained from the destructive Battle of Bu'āth that took the life of his Khazrajī rival, 'Amr b. al-Nu'mān. The last man standing, Ibn Ubayy, the chief of al-Khazraj, emerged as the de facto leader of Yathrib.

Confederacy

Around 622 C.E., Ibn Ubayy contracted a diplomatic marriage between his daughter and the son of Abū ʿĀmir al-Rāhib, head of the ʿAmr b. ʿAwf branch of al-Aws.[89] A joint Khazrajī-Awsī confederacy was in the works. Ibn Ubayy's rise to power, however, did not sit well with all of the oasis dwellers. These dissenters had bypassed his authority when they opened separate talks with Amīn at al-ʿAqaba. In September 622 C.E., Amīn dared to set foot on Ibn Ubayy's turf uninvited.[90] Following the second meeting at al-ʿAqaba, he gave the word to his followers to emigrate. Small waves of Qurayshī Muslim and Muʾmin emigrants (*al-muhājirūn*) steadily poured into Upper (southern) Yathrib. They lodged with local Banū Qayla hosts (*al-anṣār*) in Qubāʾ. Like ʿUthmān b. ʿAffān and ʿUmar b. al-Khaṭṭāb, most emigrated, while a handful stayed back in Makka. In addition, Qurayshī Muslims and Muʾmins still residing in al-Yamāma made their way to Yathrib.[91] Prior to their arrival, Ibn Maẓʿūn was actively proselytizing in Yathrib. By the time Amīn alighted in Qubāʾ accompanied by Abū Bakr, he found that a considerable number of its inhabitants were Muslims who had ʿAslamed.ʾ[92] Accordingly, Amīn was infuriated with Ibn Maẓʿūn. He nonetheless bit his tongue and refrained from any ill-advised action at this point. His first order of business was Ibn Ubayy.[93] Hoping to be received with open arms, he paid him a visit. But rather than a warm welcome, Ibn Ubayy sent him packing. The tone was set. As a result, Amīn settled in Lower (northern) Yathrib among another Khazrajī clan, the Mālik b. al-Najjār. In the meantime, Abū Bakr appropriately took up residence further south in al-Sunḥ, midway between Amīn and Ibn Maẓʿūn.[94] While Amīn built his mosque in Lower Yathrib, Ibn Maẓʿūn completed his Qubāʾ mosque in Upper (southern) Yathrib.[95] In an effort to mitigate the damage caused by Ibn Maẓʿūn, Amīn delivered a vitriolic sermon. He denigrated Aslam

by calling him a little man (*musaylima*) and a liar.[96] In a bold move geared towards legitimating his own position against that of Aslam, Amīn the preacher staked a counterclaim to exclusive prophetic authority (*al-nubuwwa*).[97] It was to little avail. He had already made a futile effort to redirect the prayer (*qibla*) away from al-Raḥmān's shrine (*ka'ba*) to Syria in the north.[98] Yathribī Muslims such as al-Barā' (d. 622 C.E.) continued to pray towards Makka until their dying day.[99] The Yathribī and Qurayshī Muslims held on dearly to both their new-found religion and its bearer, Ibn Maẓ'ūn. Vying for power with Ibn Ubayy, Amīn had no choice but to once again join forces with Ibn Maẓ'ūn in order to forge a combined Mu'min-Muslim confederacy. Amīn directed his town crier (*mu'adhdhin*), Bilāl b. Rabāḥ, to promulgate the joint Mu'min-Muslim creed (*shahāda*) that equivocated on the identity of the herald of the deity:

> I witness that there is no deity but the deity (*allāh*),
> I witness that the 'praised one' (*muḥammad*) is the herald of the deity.[100]

This satisfied both the Mu'mins and the Muslims in Yathrib.

Constitution

Amīn's aim was to weaken the tribal structure underlying Ibn Ubayy's emergent confederacy. His ultimate goal, however, was to replace Ibn Ubayy's tribe with his own neo-tribe.[101] Moreover, the emigrants to Yathrib came not as squatters, but as rebel raiders intent on exacting their revenge on the Banū Quraysh in Makka. These emigrants (*al-muhājirūn*) and their hosts (*al-anṣār*) were in effect neo-clans.[102] Membership in the Anṣār neo-clan supplanted any previous tribal affiliation with the Banū Qayla. By merging his neo-tribe with Yathrib's sedentary population, Amīn planned to create a full-fledged confederacy bound by 'imagined' kinship relations and a blood oath. The confederate treaty (*ṣaḥīfa*) read:

> This is a document from the 'praised one' (*muḥammad*) the prophet (*al-nabī*) between the Mu'mins and Muslims of Quraysh and Yathrib, and those who join them as clients, attach themselves to them and fight the holy war with them. They form one tribe (*umma*)[103] to the exclusion of others. The emigrants from Quraysh keep to their tribal organization and leadership, cooperating with each other regarding blood money and ransoming their captives according to what is customary and equitable among the Mu'mins…A Mu'min will not kill a Mu'min in retaliation for a non-believer (*kāfir*) and will not aid a non-believer against a Mu'min…The Mu'mins are allies (*mawālī*) one to another, to the exclusion of other people…Whatever you differ about should be brought before the deity (*allāh*) and the 'praised one' (*muḥammad*) [viz. Amīn]…The plain (*jawf*) of Yathrib is a violence-free zone (*ḥaram*) for the people of this treaty (*ṣaḥīfa*)…No protection will be granted to Quraysh nor to whomever supports them…They [viz. the confederates] undertake to aid each other against whosoever attacks Yathrib.[104]

This confederate oath was between two major parties: the Mu'mins and the Muslims.[105] On the one hand, these included the Qurayshī and Yathribī Mu'mins, and on the other, the Qurayshī and Yathribī Muslims. Yathrib was split between confederates and non-confederates (i.e., non-believers: *kāfir-s*). Those who had become Mu'mins and Muslims were brothers bound to one another.[106] At the same time, they were severed from their biological kin. The oath, therefore, annulled their preexisting kinship obligations, such as seeking revenge for their blood relatives.[107] In fact, the oath clearly indicated that "[a] Mu'min will not kill a Mu'min in retaliation for a non-believer (*kāfir*) and will not aid a non-believer against a Mu'min."[108] Amīn's treaty also contained another clause relating to Ibn Ubayy's own Khazrajī branch. It stipulated that "[t]he Banū 'Awf keep to their tribal organization and leadership, continuing to cooperate with each other in accordance with their former mutual aid agreements regarding blood money, and every sub-group ransoms its captives according to what is customary and equitable among the Mu'mins."[109] Similar parallel clauses pertained to other Khazrajī and Awsī members of Ibn Ubayy's budding confederacy. On the face of it, the treaty preserved Ibn Ubayy's power that was founded upon mutual protection and retaliation. In reality, however,

Amīn's confederacy eroded these foundations, thereby nipping Ibn Ubayy's power in the bud.[110] For good measure, Amīn strengthened the hand of 'Ubāda b. al-Ṣāmit of the Khazrajī Sālim clan against their mutual rival, Ibn Ubayy. In place of Ibn Ubayy, Amīn installed himself as chief, arbiter, and tribal prophet (*al-nabī al-ummī*) of the confederacy.[111] He designated the fertile lava plain (*jawf*) as a space free from violence (*ḥaram*). Most importantly, the treaty marked Amīn's target: the Banū Quraysh in Makka.

<u>From Prophet to Rebel Leader</u>

Shortly after their migration (*hijra*), a terrible bout of fever and famine struck Yathrib.[112] Following a period of convalescence, Amīn's neo-tribe mobilized. Seven months after they touched down in Yathrib, Amīn ordered the first raid (*sariyya*) against Qurayshī caravans.[113] In the months to follow, he dispatched further raiding parties, one after another. On certain occasions, he himself commanded the assault. The primary objective of the raids (*al-maghāzī*) was to temporarily divert secondary trade away from Makka. More importantly, the immediate goal was to provision themselves at their enemy's expense. The Banū Quraysh managed to elude some of these predatory attacks by traveling off the beaten track. Consequently, several raids ended without engaging the enemy. In time, the conflict steadily escalated from low-stakes guerilla warfare to combat at close quarters. Nearly two years after the exodus, Amīn engaged the Banū Quraysh head-on.

Rebel War

In March of 624 C.E., Amīn's scouts reported that a valuable Qurayshī caravan loaded with bullion was en route to Badr, a trading town southwest of Yathrib.[114] Taking a back

road, he hastened there with some three hundred of his fellow neo-tribesmen. He also sent two camel riders on a reconnaissance mission. Reluctant to jeopardize his precious cargo, the caravan leader Abū Sufyān entered the town first as a precautionary measure. Informants directed him to a well where two unidentified camel riders had stopped; here he found fresh camel dung. An expert tracker, Abū Sufyān broke apart the dung to find Yathribī date stones inside. Alarmed, he rerouted his caravan in short order and scurried to Makka. Meanwhile, a courier sped ahead to alert the Makkans of what had transpired. In Makka, Abū al-Ḥakam rallied the masses and marshaled a force of nine hundred and fifty bound for Badr. On the way there, Abū al-Ḥakam refused to turn back when he received news of the caravan's safe arrival in Makka. Instead, he charged headlong into danger. Shut in by mountains and sand dunes on all sides, the plain of Badr was a death trap. All the while, Amīn lay in wait for the anticipated caravan. Soon, word reached him that a formidable Makkan force was less than a week away. He prepared to resist the coming onslaught. He set up camp in the northernmost district, strategically located near two escape routes: one to Syria, the other to Yathrib. Outnumbered three to one, he evened the odds by compromising every water source south of his position. After a long march, the Qurayshī host was greeted by sand-filled wells. The fatigued and thirsty Makkans were no match for Amīn. Their only other option was to fall back into the parched desert. Abū al-Ḥakam stood his ground. Suddenly, out of the blue, the heavens opened.[115] Rather than a deliverance, the downpour proved damning. The Qurayshīs sunk in deep mire, unable to regain their footing.

Loyal to Aslam (known as 'Abd al-Raḥmān), Ibn Maẓ'ūn led the Muslims and charged the enemy crying out, "O People of 'Abd al-Raḥmān!"[116] The Mu'mins

followed suit. Headed by Abū Bakr (known as ʿAbd Allāh), they advanced into the battlefield shouting, "O People of ʿAbd Allāh!"[117] Above the din of battle roared the shared Muʾmin-Muslim slogan, "O victorious, slay!"[118] The bodies piled up. Among the seventy Qurayshī corpses lay Abū al-Ḥakam and Ḥanẓala, the son of Abū Sufyān.[119] With the death Abū al-Ḥakam, the fortunes of the Makhzūm clan waned. At the head of the ascendant ʿAbd Shams clan, Abū Sufyān became Makka's leading man. In the thick of the battle, the Qurayshīs killed about fourteen confederates and fatally wounded Ibn Maẓʿūn. Although the Battle of Badr failed to achieve its primary objective, Amīn generated an enormous sum ransoming the Qurayshī prisoners of war. Makkan elite families paid upwards of forty ounces of silver per captive. In one instance, Nawfal b. al-Ḥārith was ransomed in exchange for a large quantity of spears.[120] In this way, Amīn secured funds and weapons for his rebellion.

Riding on the heels of Badr, Amīn tightened his hold on Yathrib. In the following months, Ibn Maẓʿūn slowly died from his wounds.[121] At his funeral, Amīn made a public show of grief for his fallen comrade and coreligionist.[122] Yet he censured Ibn Maẓʿūn's wife, Khawla bt. Ḥakīm al-Sulamiyya, when she testified that her deceased husband was in paradise. Moreover, Amīn refused to marry this poor widow whom he distrusted.[123] After assuming leadership over the Qurayshī and Yathribī Muslims, Amīn built another mosque in Qubāʾ to rival that of Ibn Maẓʿūn.[124] Despite his efforts, isolated pockets of Muslim resistance held out in Upper (southern) Yathrib against Amīn's grab for power. Their leader-in-exile was the head of al-Aws clan, Abū ʿĀmir. This ascetic once charged Amīn with corrupting the religion.[125] In quick response, Amīn turned against Abū ʿĀmir's former partner, Ibn Ubayy. In an effort to reduce Ibn Ubayy's influence in

Yathrib, Amīn attacked his sedentary power base, the Banū Qaynuqā'. In addition to being political allies of al-Khazraj, the Banū Qaynuqā' were also Amīn's commercial rivals. Shortly after settling in Yathrib, Amīn had established a duty-free market modeled on that of 'Ukāẓ.[126] Originally set up near the Buṭḥān Bridge, his market rivaled that of the Banū Qaynuqā'. In protest, a member of this mercantile class, Ka'b b. al-Ashraf, cut the strings of the newly erected market tent. Since its location in the Banū Qaynuqā' quarter caused friction, Amīn's market was moved to the district of the Banū Sā'ida. In April 624 C.E., Amīn laid siege to the Banū Qaynuqā' strongholds.[127] Ibn Ubayy effectively intervened on their behalf. Some converted, while the rest were exiled north to Wādī al-Qurā.

War of Retaliation

The defeat at Badr damaged Makka's reputation. Soft-spoken merchants carrying little sticks, the Banū Quraysh relied heavily on their collective prestige to hold together their far-flung business ventures. The crack that appeared after Badr widened. To regain their lost honor and prestige, they needed to make an example of Amīn. At great expense, they made a show of force by mounting a military expedition numbering three thousand fighters.[128] In November 624 C.E., the Qurayshīs marched to Yathrib under the command of Abū Sufyān, Khālid b. al-Walīd al-Mughīra al-Makhzūmī (d. 642 C.E.), and 'Ikrima, the son of the slain Abū al-Ḥakam.[129] Although outnumbered four to one, Amīn exercised the option of picking the battle site, thereby maximizing his tactical home-field advantage. Unable to shed blood in the sacred plain of Yathrib, Amīn set up his base of operations north of the oasis at Mount Uḥud. With only a couple of horses at their disposal, his men had little hope for survival in an open-field battle.[130] Therefore, he

carefully chose this site in order to level the playing field by limiting his enemy's two advantages, their numerical strength and maneuverability.

Naturally carved into the rock face of the northern Uḥud curve was a niche large enough for Amīn's last stand.[131] It was over 360 feet in length and approximately 130 feet in breadth. Accessible only through a corridor about 82 feet wide, the pass was narrow enough to hold.[132] Since it was too constricted for the passage of a cavalry formation, it served to nullify the maneuverability of the Banū Quraysh's two hundred strong cavalry. Furthermore, it compelled the Qurayshīs to enter Amīn's lair in small groups vulnerable to attack. Ideal for an aerial assault with a volley of arrows, the elevated terrain flanking either side of the passageway functioned as the control valve. Fifty archers guarded either side of the northern corridor, and were instructed to allow only a handful of enemy at a time to pass through unencumbered. Thereafter, they were to stop up the corridor. On the ground, his forces were ordered to fight the enemy hand-to-hand in close quarters. Once the first wave was defeated, the archers were instructed to allow another troop of enemy inside. While one group of his men fought, the others rested in two adjacent chambers north of the niche. This tag-team effort greatly reduced the enemy's numerical strength. In this manner, he not only directed the enemy's flow, but also regulated its numbers. Since the archers formed the linchpin of his overall strategy, he issued them strict orders to hold their position at all costs. There was no room for error. His strategy succeeded in the initial leg of the conflict. The Qurayshī death toll rose to twenty-three. With victory in sight, most of the archers prematurely abandoned their stations in order to despoil the unguarded enemy camp. With the safety valve gone, the floodgates burst open. The enemy exploded onto the scene. Amīn and

his troops were pinned against the wall. Fear and panic quickly set in. His frightened men made a frenzied push through the Qurayshī lines into the open field. Here they were mercilessly cut down by Khālid's cavalry. Cornered, wounded, and deserted, his fingers frantically scrabbled against the solid rock wall. Gripping a handhold, he climbed to higher ground and took refuge in a well-hidden cave. At the end of the day, his forces were literally decimated. Seventy of the seven hundred were trodden underfoot. Among the dead was Muṣ'ab b. 'Umayr, his first envoy to Yathrib.[133] For the Makkans, the scent of victory was in the air. But at the last minute, Abū Sufyān's jealous political rival, Ṣafwān b. Umayya, stopped him from achieving total victory over the oasis.[134] The Qurayshī host withdrew. His blood revenge exacted and his tribe's reputation restored, Abū Sufyān lamented the loss of Ḥanẓala, his son who had fallen at Badr:

> Uḥud for Badr,
> A day for a day;
> Ḥanẓala Ḥanẓala,
> War is but a game of chance.[135]

After suffering this humiliating, soul-crushing defeat, it took Amīn a moment to get his bearings. In a desperate attempt to save face, he turned vengefully against his enemies at home.

The earlier incident with Ibn al-Ashraf grew to be a bone of contention between Amīn and the Banū Naḍīr who were former allies of the exiled Banū Qaynuqā'. One day, Muḥammad b. Maslama al-Ashhalī overheard Amīn saying, 'Will no one rid me of this troublesome man,' or words to that effect. With four others, including Ibn al-Ashraf's foster-brother, al-Ashhalī carried out the deed.[136] While the Banū Naḍīr mourned the loss of Ibn al-Ashraf, Amīn recounted the events after Badr.[137] Abū Sufyān had negotiated with the Banū Naḍīr for the safe passage of two hundred cavalrymen who then

proceeded to set ablaze the date palms in northern Yathrib. Amīn used this as a pretext for war against Ibn Ubayy's allies. In August 625 C.E., Amīn besieged the Banū Naḍīr for two weeks.[138] After Ibn Ubayy failed to make good his promise for reinforcements, the Banū Naḍīr surrendered and were exiled to Khaybar. Amīn won the hearts of the emigrants (*al-muhājirūn*) when he distributed the seized property among them. Ibn Ubayy was a convenient scapegoat for the failure at Uḥud. Lumped together with his former ally, Abū 'Āmir, Ibn Ubayy was branded the figurehead of the traitors and dissenters (*al-munāfiqūn*) for his obstructive activities on behalf of the Banū Qaynuqā' and the Banū Naḍīr, as well as for his alleged desertion at Uḥud.[139] Although Amīn initially planned to incorporate the sedentary population of Yathrib into his confederation, his efforts were met with heavy resistance. Those not with him were against him. The tribal prophet therefore picked off his sedentary enemies one by one, all the while consolidating his own power. As rebel leader, he never lost sight of the fact that Yathrib was only a means to an end. The conquest of Makka was always first and foremost in his mind.

Conflict

Conflagration

In order to lay his hands on Makka, Amīn widened the local conflict in search of allies. He sent out raiding parties into deadly and contested territory. The Makkans could not afford to sit idly by while Amīn conducted systematic raids on their 'inbound' shipments.[140] His actions met a reaction. The threatened Makkans summoned allies to their side, one tribe after another. As a result, Amīn embroiled western and northern Arabia in conflict. He himself, however, lacked the prerequisites for power. His position

in Yathrib was weak. As a staging ground, the oasis city was deficient in critical resources necessary to wage all out war on Makka. To remedy the situation, the tribal prophet unleashed his forces.

Authority

In 625 C.E., Amīn courted danger. The aging chief of the Banū ʿĀmir b. Ṣaʿṣaʿa, Abū al-Barāʾ approached him bearing gifts. Dwelling in the liminal zone, the Banū ʿĀmir were on the brink of assimilation. During his lifetime, Abū al-Barāʾ witnessed firsthand al-Yamāma's growing sphere of influence. Consequently, the Banū ʿĀmir faced the loss of their independence. Although vowed to the Qurayshī elite's ritual cult (*ḥums*), it struck a deal with Yathrib against their mutual Yamāmī foe. Abū al-Barāʾ proposed: "O Amīn, indeed I consider this authority (*amr*) of yours an excellent authority. My people are behind me, and if you send a group of your companions with me, I hope that they will answer your battle cry (*daʿwa*) and follow your authority. If they follow you, how excellent your authority will be!"[141] Enticed, but not convinced, Amīn responded: "I fear the people (*ahl*) of Najd will attack my companions."[142] Abū al-Barāʾ assuaged his fears: "Do not fear for them. I will be protection for them, and not one of the people of Najd will obstruct them."[143] Even though he still harbored some doubts, Amīn gathered a reconnaissance raiding party comprising forty men; among them was Abū Bakr's trusted client (*mawlā*) and fellow Taymī tribesman, ʿĀmir b. Fuhayra.[144]

Amīn quickly dispatched the raiding party to Biʾr Maʿūna, on the oblong Najd plateau.[145] This watering place straddled the pasture districts of two tribes: the Banū ʿĀmir and the Banū Sulaym. Biʾr Maʿūna was by no means a neutral zone. Left to choose between a weak chief on the one hand, and the might of al-Yamāma on the other,

the nomads of Najd fell upon Amīn's men without hesitation. Sixteen men were confirmed dead, including Ibn Fuhayra and Mundhir b. 'Amr. Deeply regretting the needless loss of life, Amīn knew better than to trust the Banū 'Āmir who had once failed to protect the royal caravan from al-Ḥīra to 'Ukāẓ. This notorious incident had sparked the sacrilegious Fijār War that Amīn had witnessed in his youth.[146] He cursed the Banū 'Āmir for the failed raid. Ḥassān b. Thābit (d. ca. 659 C.E.) composed an elegy for Ibn 'Amr who was slain at Bi'r Ma'ūna:

> God decreed upon Ibn 'Amr the truth that was most appropriate.
> They said to him, 'Choose between two authorities (*amrayn*[i]).'
> So he chose the view that was most loyal.[147]

Ibn 'Amr died a martyr upholding the authority of his comrade Amīn against that of Aslam. Nonetheless, Amīn continued to maintain amicable relations with 'Āmir b. al-Ṭufayl of the Banū 'Āmir, the culprit responsible for inciting the Banū Sulaym at Bi'r Ma'ūna. Amīn and Ibn Ṭufayl remained on friendly terms since they shared a common enemy, the Ghaṭafān, and its sub-branch, the Fazāra in northern Najd.[148] Amīn had entered into al-Yamāma's third sphere of influence. On another expedition to Najd in 626 C.E., he led over four hundred men against two Ghaṭafān sub-groups, the Anmār and Tha'laba. When his expedition (*ghazwa*) came face to face with the enemy at Dhāt al-Riqā', the nomads fled and took to the high ground.[149] Surrounded and vulnerable to an assault, Amīn retreated without directly engaging them.

Source

After the fruitless expedition at Dhāt al-Riqā', Amīn mounted a major expedition to Dūmat al-Jandal.[150] Four hundred thirty-five miles north of Yathrib, this far-off site housed the largest emporium in Arabia and was the ultimate source of the Yamāmī-

dominated trade vortex. The objective of the campaign (*ghazwa*) was to reroute Dūma's lucrative trade route southwest into Yathrib.[151] With a party of one thousand men, Amīn set out in the dead of summer. Without a supply train, they acquired provisions en route. However, the water proved impotable, the terrain torturous, and grazing virtually nonexistent. Furthermore, sand and lava tracts hampered the expedition's progress. In short, Amīn never reached Dūma proper. Over a day's journey south of Dūma, the raiding party came upon a handful of lightly armed herders from the Banū Kalb. At the sight of supper, Amīn's hunger-stricken men rushed and seized the herd, while the shepherds fled. Amīn then sent out parties to search for water and grazing. They returned without success. Only Amīn's henchman al-Ashhalī captured a single prisoner.[152] Doomed to failure, the ambitious expedition backtracked to Yathrib.

The following year, enemy forces converged on Amīn's position.[153] From the south marched the Banū Quraysh, Banū Thaqīf, and Banū Sulaym. From the north descended the Ghaṭafān, Fazāra, and the Banū Naḍīr exiles with their allies from Khaybar. Yathrib was to face a daunting enemy numbering ten thousand infantry and six hundred horsemen. Amīn prepared for the coming storm. He had trenches dug around critical quarters of Yathrib to defend against the cavalry. As a result, Abū Sufyān's coalition was forced to switch its strategy from a swift strike to a slow siege. However it was a drought year. Besides, there was not a single straw of hay in northern Yathrib left for grazing.[154] Ill-equipped and ill-provisioned, the coalition broke apart. After Amīn forced him to settle for a humiliating draw, Abū Sufyān suffered a fall from grace. For this reason, his political opponents at home gained the upper hand. Ṣafwān b. Umayya, ʿIkrima b. Abī al-Ḥakam, and Suhayl b. ʿAmr increasingly dominated Makkan

politics.[155] When the coalition broke camp, Amīn turned against the Banū Qurayẓa who were the allies of al-Aws headed by Abū ʿĀmir, the Muslim leader-in-exile. The allegation leveled against them was conspiring with the enemy. After a short siege of their farm strongholds, the Banū Qurayẓa accepted an unconditional surrender. Saʿd b. Muʿādh, an Awsī loyal to Amīn, delivered the condemning verdict.[156]

By eliminating the sedentary allies of Ibn Ubayy and Abū ʿĀmir, Amīn solidified his political hold over Yathrib. Thereafter, he attempted another raid on Dūmat al-Jandal. Led by ʿAbd al-Raḥmān b. ʿAwf in the winter of 627/8 C.E., this seven hundred man campaign also failed to reach the settlement of Dūma.[157] South of the trade depot, ʿAbd al-Raḥmān converted al-Aṣbagh, a petty local chief of the Banū Kalb. Otherwise, the expedition was a wasteful drain on Yathrib's diminishing resources. To this end, Amīn fixed his eyes on agricultural centers in the northern Ḥijāz. In 628 C.E., he waged a food war on 'the valley of villages,' Wādī al-Qurā'.[158] Three nomadic groups defended this string of valleys in exchange for part of the farmers' harvest: the ʿUdhra (a branch of the Quḍāʿa whose membership included the powerful Banū Kalb), and the Fazāra and Thaʿlaba b. Saʿd b. Dhubyān (both sub-groups of Ghaṭafān). Amīn had engaged the Fazāra on two prior occasions near Wādī al-Qurā'. This expedition, however, scored a decisive victory, and the sedentary populations capitulated. Amīn exacted one-third of the harvest, to be delivered annually. The rebel leader turned statesman now possessed the prerequisites for power. In all respects, Yathrib now stood on an equal footing with Makka.

<u>Subjugation</u>

Emboldened by his recent success, Amīn preached the invasion (*fatḥ*) of Makka. From his dream vision, he divined a speedy victory: "You will enter the sacred space secure and fearless."[159] In March 628 C.E., he ostensibly set out to perform the lesser pilgrimage (*'umra*). The Qurayshī cavalry intercepted him on the outskirts of Makka, near the village of al-Ḥudaybiya. When representatives met, Abū Sufyān was conspicuous by his absence, Ibn Ubayy by his presence. In a strong position to bargain, Amīn negotiated favorable terms with Suhayl b. 'Amr, a prominent member of the Qurayshī elite. The resulting ten-year armistice called for: (i) the immediate withdrawal of Amīn's forces, (ii) the right of return for Amīn in the following year, (iii) the cessation of hostilities, (iv) the repatriation of unauthorized Qurayshīs taking refuge in Yathrib, and (v) the permissibility for either party to form alliances with other third parties.[160] Although Amīn benefited from this chance occurrence, he never had any intention of engaging the enemy, nor of taking Makka by storm with a token force of fourteen hundred. Rather, he operated on a false pretense. His real objective was an undisclosed meeting.

Attrition

A frontal assault on Makka was quickly ruled out as a viable option. Amīn needed another way to slip the noose around Makka's neck. Poor water and dead soil doomed Makka to the fate of 'a barren valley.'[161] Therefore, he sought to exploit the Achilles' heel of Makka: food imports. He was aware that Quraysh's elite consumed the 'aristocratic starch,' wheat.[162] On the eastern Najd plateau, al-Yamāma produced enormous quantities of cereals. In addition to barley, it cultivated its famous white wheat.[163] al-Yamāma was the Makkan elite's exclusive supplier. Amīn recalled his

earlier run-in with the Banū Ḥanīfa nomads who formed al-Yamāma's fifth column. Grain shipments passed directly through their district.[164]   Once he realized that al-Yamāma was the key to winning a war of attrition against Makka, he dispatched a message to the gatekeeper of al-Yamāma.[165]   Thumāma b. Uthāl was the nomadic chief of Banū Ḥanīfa and the envious rival of Hawdha and Aslam. In March 628 C.E., before Thumāma made his grain delivery, Amīn marched to the outskirts of Makka to rendezvous with him.[166]

Although a nominal member of Hawdha's coalition, Thumāma the nomad was obviously the odd man out. Once courageous defenders of al-Yamāma's frontiers, Thumāma's poor nomads now shouldered heavy sheep and camel taxes, while the sedentary populace prospered in peace. Thumāma was growing restless and increasingly weary of Hawdha's rule. What is more, Aslam was a thorn in the nomads' side. His agrarian-based religion deliberately excluded these nomads who were dependent on the sedentary cult.[167]   In particular, the nomads objected to the ablution rites. Aslam mandated the use of water – not sand – for ritual cleansing, thus barring the nomads out in the desert steppe from partaking in the religious rites. Alienated from god, king, and country, Thumāma wanted to liberate the nomads from their heavy burden. More importantly, he anticipated that the succession struggle over the aging king's throne was just over the horizon. Thumāma made common cause with Amīn, the tribal prophet. In return for blocking Makka's grain supply, Amīn offered to assist Thumāma in his bid for power when the time came.[168]   In addition, Amīn extended his table-community by sanctifying the use of sand for ritual ablutions. He instructed, "O you who believe! When you rise to pray, wash your faces and your hands as far as the elbow, and wipe

your heads and your feet to the ankle. If you are unclean, cleanse yourselves…[if] you can find no water, take some clean sand and rub your faces and your hands with it. The deity does not wish to burden you; he seeks only to purify you and to perfect his favor to you, so that you may give thanks."[169] To seal the deal, Thumāma performed the ablutions and proclaimed the Mu'min creed.[170] He confessed to Amīn saying, "…I swear, formerly there was no one on earth I hated more than you. Now I love you best of all men. And, I swear, there was no faith more hateful to me than yours. Now your faith has become the one I love best. Moreover, there used to be no land more hated by me than your land; now your land has become the one I love best…."[171]

Following their meeting, Thumāma entered Makka as an avowed Mu'min. To the Makkans he said, "I follow the best religion, the religion of Amīn."[172] Thereafter, he threatened, "And by god not one kernel of wheat (*ḥinṭa*) from al-Yamāma will come to you until the herald [viz. Amīn] permits it."[173] Thumāma then performed the lesser pilgrimage, reciting the ritual formula (*talbiya*): 'At your service, O the deity, at your service (*labbayk^a allāhumm^a labbayk^a*).'[174] By reciting this, he had committed a sacrilegious act. The Makkans who fell upon Thumāma were bent on decapitating him. However, some Qurayshī bystanders shouted: "Let him go, you need al-Yamāma for your food."[175] Thereupon, he was instantly released. The Banū Ḥanīfa nomads proudly hailed their chief's defiant stand:

> It was our man who said publicly in Makka
> In the sacred months *labbayk^a* despite Abū Sufyān.[176]

Thumāma honored his half of the agreement by blockading the flow of food from al-Yamāma to Makka.

Submission

Amīn intensified his war of attrition. He had ten years before the truce of al-Ḥudaybiya expired. He needed to purposely inflict a famine in order to bring Makka to its knees. Along the Sarāt range, al-Ṭā'if provisioned Makka with fruits (dates and raisins), vegetables, and wine, but no cereals. As for al-Yaman, its demand for cereals outstripped its supply; it therefore exported aromatics, not food. Whereas Taymā' (located between Wādī al-Qurā and Dūmat al-Jandal) cultivated no wheat, Khaybar in the north grew and exported dates and barley.[177] The truce secured Yathrib from an attack from the rear. Although Amīn turned his attention north, all the while he was maneuvering against the south. Careful not to violate the armistice, he waged war on Khaybar, the only other major regional arms dealer besides al-Yamāma.[178] His secondary objectives were to secure the northern frontier and to stockpile food and weapons. His primary objective, however, was to seize and secure a critical node in al-Yamāma's trade network; after all, Khaybar was the last stop right before Ḥajr in al-Yamāma. Furthermore, Khaybar's northern location made it a prime staging ground against Dūmat al-Jandal and the Najd plateau. The siege of Khaybar dragged on for one and a half months; it fell when Amīn reached a peace agreement with the surrounding tribes of Ghaṭafān and Asad.[179] In the aftermath, he captured rations and weapons, including a siege engine that was stored for sale. In addition, the population agreed to fork over half of their annual crop. The attack on Khaybar struck fear into the hearts of nearby townspeople and villagers. The town of Fadak sued for peace in exchange for half of its land and half of its annual date and cereal harvest. Both were to be paid directly to Amīn.[180] Thereafter, Amīn raided Najd. In the winter of 628/9 C.E., Abū Bakr led a raid against the Hawāzin, the tribal confederation to which the Banū 'Āmir belonged.[181] Then in 629 C.E., Amīn dispatched another small

raiding party of twenty-four against the Hawāzin at al-Siyy (in the territory of the Banū ‘Āmir).[182] This two-week expedition captured a large number of sheep and cattle, as well as a handful of women. Otherwise, all of these campaigns in Najd made no territorial gains.

Despite the fact that the armistice of al-Ḥudaybiya suspended open hostilities, both sides nonetheless engaged in proxy warfare. Along the northern coast, Abū Jandal and Abū Baṣīr led a group of three hundred marauders.[183] Fighting on behalf of Amīn, they despoiled Qurayshī caravans from Syria, the major foreign supplier of Makka’s foodstuffs. Combined with Thumāma’s efforts, Abū Jandal mercilessly choked Makka to death.[184] In response, Abū Sufyān journeyed to Yathrib to negotiate terms. He requested the recall of Abū Jandal and the others.[185] Amīn consented. During the talks, Abū Sufyān asked Amīn a frank question: “Do you not claim that you were sent out of compassion for the worlds?” Amīn nodded. In a stern rebuttal, Abū Sufyān argued: “But you have killed the fathers with the sword, and the sons with hunger.”[186] From this point forward, Amīn took measures to alleviate Makka’s suffering. In addition to lifting Thumāma’s blockade, he delivered to Makka a shipment of barley and dates captured at Khaybar.[187] The spoils were divided among the Qurayshī elite, namely, Abū Sufyān, Ṣafwān b. Umayya, and Suhayl b. ‘Amr. While Ibn Umayya and Ibn ‘Amr rejected Amīn’s gesture of goodwill, Abū Sufyān accepted it wholeheartedly saying, “May the deity reward my brother, for he does good unto the kindred.”[188] As a result, the elites became even more polarized.[189] In 629 C.E., Amīn wed Ramla bt. Abī Sufyān b. Ḥarb b. al-Ḥārith (Umm Ḥabība) (d. ca. 664/5 C.E.) who was the thrice-married daughter of Abū Sufyān b. Ḥarb b. al-Ḥārith and sister of Muʿāwiya b. Abī Sufyān.[190] This marriage

bound together the destinies of Yathrib and Makka. In March 630 C.E., Abū Sufyān and Ḥakīm b. Ḥizām graciously invited Amīn to enter Makka with his force of ten thousand.[191] The food blockade had broken the Makkans' will. They literally lacked the strength to resist. Amīn declared a general amnesty.[192] In his quest to correct the imbalance in Makkan society, things had gone horribly awry. It unleashed pestilence, war, famine, and death. Amīn conquered Makka while simultaneously causing its precipitous decline. His victory was a defeat, his triumph a failure. This is the paradox of middle proto-Islāmic history.

[1] For Makka before Muḥammad, see Michael Cook, *Muhammad* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1983), 13. For "The Chronology of Muḥammad's Life," see Rubin, *Eye*, 189-214, esp. 197 (for "typological" dating) and 200 (for "chronological synchronization").

[2] For Quraysh al-Biṭāḥ and Quraysh al-Ẓawāhir, see W. Montgomery Watt, *Muhammad at Mecca* (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1953), 5; and Eric R. Wolf, "The Social Organization of Mecca and the Origins of Islam," *SJA* 7:4 (Winter, 1951): 335.

[3] For the mounting grain crisis (and Syrian imports), see for example, John L. Teall, "The Grain Supply of the Byzantine Empire, 330-1025," *Dumbarton Oaks Papers* 13 (1959): 94 and 119; and Walter E. Kaegi, *Heraclius: Emperor of Byzantium* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2003), 40 and 88.

[4] For the 'Concept of Sin,' see Weber, *Sociology*, 43.

[5] For "The Ḥums," see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 87 ff., esp. 88, fn. 1; and Kister, "Mecca and Tamīm," 138 and passim. For the "Organization of *ḥums* and *īlāf*," see Simon, 63. For 'Totemism,' see Weber, *Sociology*, 39 f.

[6] For "ethical monotheism," see Weber, *Sociology*, 138. For "Four Men Who Broke with Polytheism," see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 98-103.

[7] Translation adapted from Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 100.

[8] For the "circulation of wealth," see Michael Bonner, "Poverty and Charity in the Rise of Islam," in *Poverty and Charity in Middle Eastern Contexts*, eds. Michael Bonner, Mine Ener and Amy Singer (Albany: State University of New York Press, 2003), 14. For the 'Advent Solution' and the 'Concept of Other World,' see Weber, *Sociology*, 139 ff.

[9] For "The Birth of the Apostle and His Suckling," see for example, Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 70 f. For famine, see for example, ibid.

[10] For Ḥalīma, see for example, Rubin, *Eye*, 60 f. and 245.

[11] For Muḥammad as a shepherd, see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 72. For "co-liable groups," see Ella Landau-Tasseron, s.v. Tribes and Clans, *EQ*.

[12] *Master of the Age*, ed. and trans. Paul Walker (London: I.B. Tauris, 2007), 96 f. For Quss b. Sāʿida, see I. Shahid, s.v. Najrān, *EQ*.

[13] For 'world-rejecting asceticism' (*weltablehnende Askese*), see Weber, *Sociology*, 166. For Ḥirāʾ, see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 105.

[14] For poor passersby, see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 105. For "Personal Devotions," see Peters, *Muhammad*, 128 ff.

[15] For 'reawakened' culture shock, see Audrey C. Shalinsky, s.v. Culture Shock, *EA*.

[16] Translation adapted from F.E. Peters, *A Reader on Classical Islam* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1994), 175 (Q. 74:1-5). For prophethood as a 'unremunerated' vocation, see Weber, *Sociology*, 47. For the chronology of the earliest passages of the Qurʾān, see W. Montgomery Watt, *Muhammad: Prophet and Statesman* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1961), 23. For the chronology of the First, Second, and Third Makkan Period chapters (*sūra-s*), also see Bell, 110, and cf. 111.

[17] For 'inner-worldly asceticism' (*innerweltliche Askese*), see Weber, *Sociology*, 166-183, esp. 171 and 173.

[18] Translation adapted from Watt, *M/Prophet*, 31 (Q. 93: 9-11).

[19] Ibid. (Q. 104: 1-3).

[20] Q. 104:4, translation adapted from *Koran*, trans. N.J. Dawood (London: Penguin, 2006).

[21] For 'political salvation,' see Weber, *Sociology*, 43 and 148. For "The Prescription of Prayer," see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 112 ff.; and Watt, *M/Mecca*, 152.

[22] Q. 56:15-21, translation adapted from *Koran*.

[23] For the "permanent settlement at Mecca," see Wolf, 332. For the "real functional units of Meccan society," see ibid., 335.

[24] For a "Survey of the Earlier Muslims," see for example, Watt, *M/Mecca*, 96. For Makka's "dependent population," see Wolf, 335. For Abū Bakr, see W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. Abū Bakr, *EI²*; and al-Balādhurī, s.v. Abū Bakr, 145 f. For "The Companions Who Accepted Islām at the Invitation of Abū Bakr," see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 115 ff., and cf. 146. For ʿAlī b. Abī Ṭālib, see ibid., 114 f. For Zayd b. Ḥāritha and Khadīdja bt. Khuwaylid, see Lecker, s.v. Zayd b. Ḥāritha; and cf. Watt, s.v. Khadīdja. For Zayd b. ʿAmr, see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 100. For ʿUthmān b. ʿAffān, see G. Levi Della Vida and R.G. Khoury, s.v. ʿUthmān b. ʿAffān, *EI²*.

[25] "Bad harvests around Mecca are said to have caused the prices of bread to rise" (Wolf, 334).

[26] "Cereals are a luxury reserved for the rich and great" (Watt, *M/Mecca*, 2).

[27] For "Generosity, Competition, and Waste," see for example, Bonner, "Poverty and Charity," 20 f.

[28] Q. 90:1-11, translation adapted from *Koran*.

[29] Q. 96:6-8, translation adapted from ibid.

[30] Q. 88:17-20, translation adapted from ibid.

[31] Q. 106:1-2, translation adapted from ibid.

[32] Q. 106:2-4, translation adapted from ibid.

[33] Q. 55:6-9, translation adapted from ibid.

[34] For "Opposition and Rejection," see for example, Watt, *M/Prophet*, 63 f. For "The Letter of 'Urwa," see Watt, *M/Mecca*, 100 f. and 116.

[35] For "The First Muslims," see Watt, *M/Mecca*, 87, 96 f., 116, and 163; and Ibn Sa'd, s.v. 'Uthmān b. Maẓ'ūn, *Kitāb al-Ṭabaqāt al-Kabīr (Biographien Muhammeds)*, vol. 3, part 1, ed. Eduard Sachau (Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1904), esp. 286.

[36] For 'Uthmān b. Maẓ'ūn, see Watt, *M/Prophet*, 69; Watt, *M/Mecca*, 115; C.E. Bosworth, s.v. Khawla bt. Ḥakīm, *EI²*; Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 116 and 168; and A.J. Wensinck, s.v. 'Uthmān b. Maẓ'ūn, *EI²*.

[37] For Ibn Maẓ'ūn's followers, see Watt, *M/Prophet*, 69; Ibn Sa'd, s.v. 'Uthmān b. Maẓ'ūn, 286; and Watt, *M/Mecca*, 87, and cf. 90.

[38] "The accounts of Muḥammad's difficulties with 'Uthmān [b. Maẓ'ūn] suggest that he had no easy time in canalizing the hopes and ideas of such preexisting monotheists" (Watt, *M/Mecca*, 97). "…[T]here was a sharp division of opinion within the embryonic Islamic community. After giving the first list of emigrants from Ibn Isḥāq, Ibn Hishām adds a note to the effect that the leader was 'Uthmān b. Maẓ'ūn…'Uthmān originally came to Muḥammad with four friends, quite important men, and was doubtless the foremost of them. He is thus almost certainly to be regarded as the leader of a group within the Muslims which was in some sense a rival to the group led by Abū Bakr. The remark of 'Umar's, mentioned by Ibn Sa'd, that, until after the deaths of Muḥammad and Abū Bakr, he thought little of 'Uthmān because he died in his bed, is a relic of the rivalry between 'Uthmān b. Maẓ'ūn and the group of Abū Bakr and 'Umar" (Ibid., 115). For a Second Makkan Period (see Bell, 110) chapter (Q. 17:73-75) alluding to "…some opposition among the believers or to apostasy," see Watt, *M/Mecca*, 133. For 'Uthmān b. Maẓ'ūn as a latecomer along with his brothers, Qudāma and 'Abd Allāh, cf. Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 116.

[39] Q. 55:1 (Sūrat al-Raḥmān).

[40] For "A Famine in Mecca," see Donner, "Mecca's Food Supplies," 258 ff. (Q. 44:10-12; Q. 23:74-76; Q. 16:112), and cf. 265, fn. 44. For the fluctuating cost of agricultural products, see Wolf, 334. For "The Raḥmān of al-Yamāma," see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 79-84; Kister, "Struggle," 4 and 6 ('Raḥmān al-Yamāma'); Ibn Kathīr, *Life*, vol. 4, 67 ('al-Raḥmān,' 'Raḥmān of al-Yamāma'); and cf. al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 42.

[41] Q. 21:36, cited in Peters, *Muhammad*, 157.

[42] Q. 25:60, cited in ibid.

[43] al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 82.

[44] Q. 13:30, translation adapted from Peters, *Muhammad*, 157.

[45] "…[I]t would appear that the name *the Muslims* would most naturally have meant 'the Traitors'" (Margoliouth, "On the Origin," 473).

[46] Translation adapted from al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 82. For 'Uqba b. Abī Mu'ayṭ, see Uri Rubin, s.v. Abū Jahl, *EI³*; and Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 164 f. For al-Naḍr b. al-Ḥārith, see Ch. Pellat, s.v. al-Naḍr b. al-Ḥārith, *EI²*; and Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 162 f.

[47] Q. 17:110, cited in Peters, *Muhammad*, 157 (emphasis added).

[48] For Abū Jahl, see Rubin, s.v. Abū Jahl, and W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. Abū Djahl, *EI²*. For 'structural violence,' see Felipe E. MacGregor, S.J., and Marcial Rubio C., "Rejoinder to the Theory of Structural Violence," in *The Culture of Violence*, eds. Kumar Rupesinghe and Marcial Rubio C. (Tokyo: United Nations University Press, 1994), 49 and 51; Johan Galtung, *Essays in Peace Research*, vol. 1 (Copenhagen: Christian Ejlers, 1975); and Johan Galtung, "Cultural Violence," *JPR* 27:3 (Aug., 1990): 291-305.

[49] For "The Boycott of the Clan of Hāshim," see Watt, *M/Prophet*, 74-82, esp. 79 f.; and Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 159 ff.

[50] Reconstructed reading: 'Amīn' in lieu of 'Muḥammad.' Translation adapted from Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 159 f.; and Ibn Isḥāq, *Das Leben*, vol. 1, part 1, 231.

[51] Q. 111, translation adapted from *Koran*. For "The Ill-treatment the Apostle Received from His People," see for example, Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 161. For Abū Sufyān, see Farhoud Bernjian and Farzin Negahban, s.v. Abū Sufyān, *EI$_S$*.

[52] For "economic pressure," see Watt, *M/Prophet*, 75.

[53] For this and similar episodes, see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 160 f. and 172. For Abū al-Bakhtarī *al-Asad*, see Watt, *M/Mecca*, 92, 121, 174, and 181.

[54] "…[T]he boycott must be adjudged a comparative failure" (Watt, *M/Prophet*, 77).

[55] For 'Uthmān b. Maẓ'ūn's leading role in the flight, see Watt, *M/Mecca*, 110 and 115; and "Ibn Hishām's Notes," 721, Note 190.

[56] For "The Migration to Abyssinia," see Watt, *M/Prophet*, 65-75; Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 146 f.; and Donner, *Muhammad*, 42. For Muḥammad's dream vision about al-Yamāma as the destination of his *hijra*, see Makin, *Representing*, 115; and Muslim, *Saḥīḥ Muslim* (al-Riyāḍ: Bayt al-Afkār al-Dawliyya, 1998), 934. "But the Meccans had no timber and no ships…" (Patricia Crone, *Meccan Trade and the Rise of Islam* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1987), 4 f.).

[57] For "The District of al-'Irḍ," see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 25 and 44.

[58] For "The Quraysh Send to Abyssinia to Get the Emigrants Returned," see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 150-153.

[59] Cf. the title of 'the ruler' of Abyssinia, see E. van Donzel, s.v. al-Nadjāshī, *EI²*.

[60] Translation adapted from Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 151 f.; and Ibn Isḥāq, *Das Leben*, vo1. 1, part 1, 219. For *mulūk al-afāq*, see al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 86.

[61] For the repatriation of the emigrants to al-Ḥijāz, see Watt, *M/Prophet*, 66 and 69; and Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 526-530.

[62] Cf. Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 170.

[63] "'Uthmān ibn-Maẓ'ūn and the others who returned to Mecca before 622 were soon reconciled with Muḥammad and Abū-Bakr, and this shows that the break can never have been complete" (Watt, *M/Prophet*, 69; and Watt, *M/Mecca*, 117).

[64] For the 'two gold bracelets' and "The Liars Musaylima al-Ḥanafī and al-Aswad al-'Ansī," see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 648; Ibn Isḥāq, *Das Leben*, vol. 1, part 2, 964; and Ibn Kathīr, *Life*, vol. 4, 66 f. For Abū Hurayra as the 'great liar,' see Donner, "Mecca's Food Supplies," 262, fn. 36 (b). "…[R]evelation functions continuously as oracle or dream interpretation" (Weber, *Sociology*, 47).

[65] For "The Betrayal by Abū Lahab," see Watt, *M/Prophet*, 79-82; and Watt, *M/Mecca*, 120.

[66] For "The Apostle Goes to Thaqīf to Seek Help" and "The Apostle Offers Himself to the Tribes," see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 192-197; and Watt, *M/Mecca*, 137-141.

[67] For "The Sacrilegious War," see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 82; "Ibn Hishām's Notes," 709 f., Note 124; Bernjian, s.v. Abū Sufyān; and Ed., s.v. Ḥarb b. Umayya b. 'Abd Shams, *EI²*.

[68] Translation adapted from Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 195. On 'ceding' authority, see ibid., and Kister, "Struggle," 12.

[69] For Muḥammad's low estimation of these tribes, see Makin, "Re-thinking," 173; and Kister, "Struggle," 13.

[70] For this feud, see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 197. For maps of Yathrib (al-Madīna), see Hamidullah, *Battlefields*, 22 and 31; Watt, *M/Prophet*, 86; and Michael Lecker, "Glimpses of Muḥammad's Medinan Decade," in *The Cambridge Companion to Muḥammad*, ed. Jonathan E. Brockopp (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2010), 64-65.

[71] "The grain of al-Yamama was sold in Mecca, Medina and Basra" (al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 49). "[T]here is evidence that wheat was exported from al-Yamāma to Mecca not only after the rise of Islam, but during Muḥammad's lifetime as well" (Donner, "Mecca's Food Supplies," 254).

[72] "Date palms were cultivated in all oases, but in the 'Ird valley and in al-Khardj grain was grown. In good years corn [viz. 'kernel of wheat (ḥinṭa)' (see Donner, "Mecca's Food Supplies," 262)] was sent to Mecca, but in bad years it was not even sufficient for local consumption" (W. Caskel, s.v. Bakr b. Wā'il, *EI²*).

[73] For the Battle of Bu'āth, see Watt, *M/Mecca*, 142; and Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 197.

[74] Translation adapted from Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 197-198. Also see Muslim, 934. For al-'Aqaba, see W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. al-'Aḳaba, *EI²*.

[75] Translation adapted from Makin, *Representing*, 115; and Muslim, 934.

[76] Muslim, 934.

[77] For "The Pledges of al-'Aqaba," see for example, Watt, *M/Mecca*, 145.

---

[78] For 'Uthmān b. Maẓ'ūn's hasty departure, see ibid., 183 f.

[79] "Tradition records claims made on behalf of two members of the Aws killed prior to the battle of Bu'āth that they died as Muslims" (Ibid., 144). For Iyās b. Mu'ādh's status as a Muslim "before the battle of Bu'āth," see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 197.

[80] Cited in "Ibn Hishām's Notes," 727, Note 237.

[81] For "The Second Pledge at al-'Aqaba," see Watt, *M/Mecca*, 145; and Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 201-204.

[82] For the negotiations, see Michael Lecker, "Did the Quraysh Conclude a Treaty with the Anṣār prior to the Hijra?," in *The Biography of Muhammad: The Issue of the Sources*, ed. Harald Motzki (Leiden: Brill, 2000), 164 and passim.

[83] For the threat to unleash war, see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 205; For the "…Anṣār who were also entitled to be called Muhājirūn," see Lecker, "Did the Quraysh Conclude a Treaty," 164 f.

[84] For examples of those who took flight or "…succumbed to the temptation to apostatize," see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 216 f.

[85] For the name 'Yathrib,' see W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. al-Madīna, *EI²*. For "The Terrain around Medina," see Hamidullah, *Battlefields*, 23.

[86] For "Medina on the Eve of Islam," see Lecker, "King Ibn Ubayy," 40.

[87] For the shifting alliances, see ibid., 40 f. and 44. For "The Near-Crowning of 'Abd Allāh b. Ubayy," see ibid., 48; and W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. 'Abd Allāh b. Ubayy, *EI²*.

[88] For the fortress of Muzāḥim, see Lecker, "King Ibn Ubayy," 49. For 'Amr b. al-Nu'mān, see ibid., 46.

[89] For the 'Amr b. 'Awf and Abū 'Āmir al-Rāhib, see ibid., 40 and 56.

[90] For the date of the *hijra*, see W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. Hidjra, *EI²*.

[91] For the 'waves' of emigration, see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 218; Watt, *M/Mecca*, 150; and Watt, *M/Prophet*, 66.

[92] "…[I]t may be noted that both Jews (Sūra xxviii, 53) and Christians (Ibn Isḥāk, pp. 209, 210) are represented as declaring that they had *aslam*'d before the Prophet" (Margoliouth, "On the Origin," 476).

[93] For Ibn Ubayy's harsh response to Muḥammad, see Lecker, "King Ibn Ubayy," 51.

[94] For Muḥammad's lodgings, see ibid., 48. For Abū Bakr's lodgings, see Watt, s.v. Abū Bakr, *EI²*; and al-Balādhurī, s.v. Abū Bakr, 166 f.

[95] For the Qubā' mosque, see Claude Gilliot, s.v. Mosque of the Dissension, *EQ*.

[96] For this sermon, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 87; and cf. Makin, *Representing*, 160.

[97] For Musaylima's "claim to the prophethood," see for example, Ibn Kathīr, *Life*, vol. 4, 70.

[98] For "The Change of Qibla," see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 202; Watt, *M/Medina*, 202; and al-Ṭabarī, *The Foundation of the Community*, vol. 7, trans. W. Montgomery Watt and M.V. McDonald (Albany: State University of New York Press, 1987), 24-25.

[99] For al-Barā' b. Ma'rūr, see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 202; Watt, *M/Medina*, 202; and K.V. Zetterstéen, s.v. al-Barā', *EI²*.

[100] For the *mu'adhdhin* and the *shahāda*, see Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 56; Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 639, and 641, Note 2; al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 90; and Q. 3:144, 33:40, 47:2, and 48:29. For the chronology of the Madīnan Period chapters, see Bell, 110 f. For *muḥammad* as a title, cf. Ibn Isḥāq, *Das Leben*, vol. 1, part 1, 117; and Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 86. For Bilāl b. Rabāḥ, see W. 'Arafat, s.v. Bilāl b. Rabāḥ, *EI²*.

[101] For Muḥammad's neo-tribe, cf. Watt, *M/Mecca*, 148 and 153.

[102] For the Anṣār clan/tribe, see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 213 and 230; and W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. al-Anṣār, *EI²*.

[103] "*Umma* appears to have the sense of tribe…Elsewhere *umma* is interpreted as *qabīla*…" (Michael Lecker, *The "Constitution of Medina": Muḥammad's First Legal Document* (Princeton: Darwin Press, 2004), 90 f.).

[104] Translation adapted from Lecker, *"Constitution of Medina"*, 32-39; Donner, *Muhammad*, 228-232; and Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 231 ff.

[105] For the parties involved, see Lecker, *"Constitution of Medina"*, 40.

[106] For the "Brotherhood between Emigrants and Helpers," see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 234.

[107] For "blood vengeance," see Lecker, "Glimpses," 68.

[108] Translation adapted from Lecker, *"Constitution of Medina"*, 33; and Lecker, "Glimpses," 68.

[109] Translation adapted from Lecker, *"Constitution of Medina"*, 32.

[110] "On the face of it, the agreement upheld the tribal system of Medina. But in reality, families – and needless to say, tribal groups – were split between those who followed Muḥammad (i.e., the *mu'minūn*) and all the others" (Lecker, "Glimpses," 68). For 'Ubāda b. al-Ṣāmit, see Lecker, "King Ibn Ubayy," 48.

[111] For *al-nabī al-ummī*, see Lecker, *"Constitution of Medina"*, 90-91; and cf. R. Paret, s.v. Ummī, *EI¹*.

[112] For "Fever Attacks the Apostle's Companions," see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 279 f.

[113] For the first raid (*sariyya*), see al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 3. For a comparative chronology of the *maghāzī*, see J.M.B. Jones, "The Chronology of the *Maghāzī* – A Textual Survey," *BSOAS* 19 (1957): 245-280.

[114] For Badr, see W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. Badr, *EI²*; and Hamidullah, *Battlefields*, 13-21.

[115] "On the day of the Battle of Badr it had rained and historians record that as a consequence the Quraishite camp had become a swamp…" (Hamidullah, *Battlefields*, 15).

[116] For this 'watchword,' see ibid., 19 f.; and Ibn Kathīr, *Life*, vol. 2, 276.

[117] For this 'watchword,' see Ibn Kathīr, *Life*, vol. 2, 276; and Hamidullah, *Battlefields*, 19. For Abū Bakr as 'Abd Allāh, see W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. Abū Bakr, *EI²*.

[118] For this 'watchword,' see Hamidullah, *Battlefields*, 20.

[119] For Ḥanẓala b. Abī Sufyān, see ibid., 28, fn. 1. For the rise of Abū Sufyān in Makka, see Watt, *M/Mecca*, 92.

[120] For the ransoming of captives, see Hamidullah, *Battlefields*, 21.

[121] For the death of 'Uthmān b. Maẓ'ūn, see Watt, *M/Mecca*, 115; al-Ṭabarī, *Foundation*, 91; cf. Watt, *M/Medina*, 399; and Ibn al-Kalbī, s.v. 'Uṯmān b. Maẓ'ūn, vol. 2, 579.

[122] For Khawla bt. Ḥakīm, see Wensinck, s.v. 'Uthmān b. Maẓ'ūn; Bosworth, s.v. Khawla bt. Ḥakīm; and Watt, *M/Medina*, 399.

[123] For an example of Muḥammad's distrust of Khawla bt. Ḥakīm, see al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 458.

[124] For "Other Mosques in the Time of the Prophet," see J. Pedersen, s.v. Masdjid, *EI²*; and Gilliot, s.v. Mosque of the Dissension. For those "…linked to the Ḍirār incident," see Michael Lecker, *Muslims, Jews and Pagans: Studies on Early Islamic Medina* (Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1995), 74-153, esp. 76 ff. and 126, fn. 178; and cf. Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 198.

[125] For Abū 'Āmir, see Gilliot, s.v. Mosque of the Dissension; and Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 278.

[126] For Muḥammad's market, see M.J. Kister, "The Market of the Prophet," *JESHO* 8:3 (Dec., 1965): 274 ff.

[127] For the Banū Qaynuqā' episode, see A.J. Wensinck, s.v. Qaynuqā', *EI²*. For this episode as a trebling, see Marco Schöller, *"Sīra and Tafsīr*: Muḥammad al-Kalbī on the Jews of Medina," in *The Biography of Muḥammad: The Issue of the Sources*, 26-27; and Gregor Schoeler, *The Biography of Muḥammad: Nature and Authenticity*, trans. Uwe Vagelpohl, ed. James E. Montgomery (New York and London: Routledge, 2011), 11-12. However, Schoeler also notes that "[c]onverted descendants of the Jewish tribes expelled by the Prophet from Medina are said to have given Ibn Isḥāq information about his respective campaigns" (Schoeler, *Biography*, 26).

[128] For the problem of numbers, see for example, Gottfried Hagen, "The Imagined and the Historical Muḥammad," *JAOS* 129:1 (2009): 105.

[129] For Uḥud, see Hamidullah, *Battlefields*, 22-28.

[130] "…[O]n the day of Uḥud [we only had] a single horse" (al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 374).

[131] For "A Description of the Terrain of Mount Uḥud," see Hamidullah, *Battlefields*, 24. For a passing reference to Mount Uḥud, see Ibn Kathīr, *Life*, vol. 4, 68.

[132] See Muhammad Hamidullah, *Map of the Battlefield of Uhud* [map], 2cm = 100 metres, in Hamidullah, *Battlefields*, 22.

[133] For this envoy, see F. Buhl, s.v. Muṣ'ab b. 'Umayr, *EI²*.

[134] For this rivalry, see W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. Abū Sufyān, *EI²*.

[135] Cited in Hamidullah, *Battlefields*, 28.

[136] For "The Killing of Ka'b b. al-Ashraf," see W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. Ka'b b. al-Ashraf, *EI²*; and al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 91-96.

[137] For the day of Ka'b b. al-Ashraf's death, see Watt, s.v. Ka'b b. al-Ashraf. For Abū Sufyān's dealings with the Banū Naḍīr, see Bernjian, s.v. Abū Sufyān; and cf. V. Vacca, s.v. Naḍīr, *EI²*.

[138] For the length of the siege, see Vacca, s.v. Naḍīr. For the date of the siege, see Watt, s.v. Ka'b b. al-Ashraf. For 'Abd Allāh b. Ubayy's intercession on behalf of the Banū Naḍīr, see Lecker, "King Ibn Ubayy," 44 f.

[139] For 'Abd Allāh b. Ubayy's alleged desertion, see Hamidullah, *Battlefields*, 24. For 'Abd Allāh b. Ubayy as the "leader of the *munāfiḳūn*," see A. Brockett, s.v. al-Munāfiqūn, *EI²*. For "Some Account of the Hypocrites," see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 277 ff.

[140] For 'inbound' shipments, see Donner, "Mecca's Food Supplies," 256 f.

[141] Reconstructed reading: 'Amīn' in lieu of 'Muḥammad.' Translation adapted from al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 169. al-Wāqidī, *Kitāb al-Maghāzī*, vol. 1, ed. Marsden Jones (London: Oxford University Press, 1966), 346. For *daʿwa* as 'battle cry,' see Ignaz Goldziher, *Muslim Studies*, vol. 1, trans. C.R. Barber and S.M. Stern (London: George Allen & Unwin Ltd., 1967), 63.

[142] Translation adapted from al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 169.

[143] Translation adapted from ibid.

[144] For ʿĀmir b. Fuhayra, see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 116.

[145] For "The Raid of Biʾr Maʿūna," see al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 169-172; C.E. Bosworth, s.v. Biʾr Maʿūna, *EI²*; and M.J. Kister, "The Expedition of Biʾr Maʿūna," in *Arabic and Islamic Studies in Honor of H.A.R. Gibb*, ed. G. Makdisi (Leiden: Brill, 1965), 337-357.

[146] For the instigation of 'the second' Fijār War, see Fück, s.v. Fidjār.

[147] Translation adapted from al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 173; and al-Wāqidī, *Maghāzī*, vol. 1, 353.

[148] For the Ghaṭafān as their common enemy, see W. Caskel, ʿĀmir b. Ṣaʿṣaʿa, *EI²*; and J.W. Fück, s.v. Ghaṭafān, *EI²*.

[149] For "The Raid of Dhāt al-Riqāʿ," see Hamidullah, *Battlefields*, 29; al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 194-197; and al-Wāqidī, *Maghāzī*, vol. 1, 395.

[150] For "The First Moslem Expedition against Dūma (626 A.D.)," see Musil, *Arabia Deserta*, 535 ff.; al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 197 f.; and Veccia L. Vaglieri, Dūmat al-Jandal, *EI²*.

[151] For the alleged reason behind Muḥammad's attempt to reroute trade, see al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 197.

[152] For the captive, see Musil, *Arabia Deserta*, 535. For al-Ashhalī, see al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 205 f.

[153] For enemy troop movements at Khandaq, see Hamidullah, *Battlefields*, 30; and W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. Khandaq, *EI²*.

[154] "They had arrived at a time when there was no wild or cultivated crop. The people had harvested a month before and brought in the harvest and straw…Their camels were almost destroyed by starvation. The night they arrived there was a drought in the city" (al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 218).

[155] For Abū Sufyān's fall from grace, see Watt, s.v. Abū Sufyān.

[156] For the Banū Qurayẓa episode and Saʿd b. Muʿādh, see W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. Qurayẓa, *EI²*; and Lecker, "King Ibn Ubayy," 45.

[157] For "The Second Moslem Expedition against Dūma (627 – 628 A.D.)," see Musil, *Arabia Deserta*, 537 ff.

[158] For Wādī al-Qurāʾ, see M. Lecker, s.v. Wādī ʾl-Qurāʾ, *EI²*; and Ibn Ḥawqal, 31. For the Quḍāʿa, see M.J. Kister, s.v. Quḍāʿa, *EI²*.

[159] Q. 48:27, translation adapted from *Koran*. For the armistice and the participants, see W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. al-Ḥudaybiya, *EI²*; Watt, s.v. Abū Sufyān; Bernjian, s.v. Abū Sufyān; Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 499-507, esp. 504-507; and Watt, s.v. al-Madīna.

[160] For the terms of the armistice, see Watt, s.v. al-Ḥudaybiya. For historical accidence (Gk. *tuchē*) as a factor all too often omitted in the analysis of history, see for example, Max Weber, "Science as a Vocation," in *The Vocation Lectures*, 4.

[161] "…Mecca, unlike some other caravan cities, did not have an oasis or agricultural area as its center. The grudging volcanic dust which passed for soil in Mecca would have discouraged even the most dedicated peasant cultivator; and given the severe shortage of reliable wells which marked the town, it is not difficult to see why Mecca had only the most limited agriculture…In short, Mecca was unable to produce the basic foodstuffs required to support its growing population on the eve of Islam. The city relied on the outside world…for the staples needed to sustain life" (Donner, "Mecca's Food Supplies," 251-254). *Koran* (Q. 14:37).

[162] For the 'aristocratic starch,' see Donner, "Mecca's Food Supplies," 252.

[163] For "Agricultural Crops," see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 48 f.

[164] For "The District of Qarqarī," see ibid., 22.

[165] For Muḥammad's envoy to Thumāma b. Uthāl, see Kister, "Struggle," 15; Watt, *M/Medina*, 132 f.; Makin, *Representing*, 131 f.; and al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 106, fn. 697.

[166] "…[T]he blockade of Abū Jandal and Abū Baṣīr…started *only after* al-Ḥudaybiyya" (Uri Rubin, "Muḥammad's Curse of Muḍar and the Blockade of Mecca," *JESHO* 31:3 (1988): 253 f., emphasis added). "The Messenger of God (ṢAAS) congratulated him [viz. Thumāma] and told him to proceed on the *ʿumra*" (Ibn Kathīr, *Life*, vol. 4, 65 f.). "al-Bukhārī's having given this story [about Thumāma's encounter with the Makkans] in his section on delegations is controversial…It is also questionable whether he [viz. Thumāma]

should be referred to among the delegations occurring in 9 A.H. This is because it is evident from the text of his story that it relates to *prior* to the conquest of Mecca…This is why the *ḥāfiẓ* al-Bayhaqī narrates the story of Thumāma b. Uthāl *before* the conquest of Mecca; this is most likely to have been the case. However, we have given it here in deference to al-Bukhārī…" (Ibid., 66, emphasis added). "…[al-Yamāma's] granary was the main source of Quraishite import of grain. When Thumāma b. Uthāl, a chieftain of al-Yamāma, stopped at the instance [sic] of the Prophet, exports of grain, historians record that a famine in Mecca was the result" (Hamidullah, *Battlefields*, 37).

[167] For a comparative case where "[t]he nomads received the benefit of urban facilities such as markets (*musabala*) and institutionalized religious rites," see Kostiner, 3-4.

[168] For the blockade, see Donner, "Mecca's Food Supplies," 262.

[169] Q. 5:6, translation adapted from *Koran*.

[170] For "[t]he story of Thumāma's conversion," see Donner, "Mecca's Food Supplies," 262 f., fn. 36.

[171] Cited in Ibn Kathīr, *Life*, vol. 4, 65. Also see "Ibn Hishām's Notes," 791 f., Note 915.

[172] Reconstructed reading: 'Amīn' in lieu of 'Muḥammad.' Translation cited in "Ibn Hishām's Notes," 791 f., Note 915. Also see Donner, "Mecca's Food Supplies," 262.

[173] Translation adapted from Donner, "Mecca's Food Supplies," 262. Also see "Ibn Hishām's Notes," 791 f., Note 915.

[174] Translation adapted from Hawting, *Idea of Idolatry*, 22. For the *talbiya*, see Peters, *Muhammad*, 107 and 118. Also see "Ibn Hishām's Notes," 791 f., Note 915.

[175] Translation adapted from "Ibn Hishām's Notes," 791, Note 915.

[176] Translation adapted from ibid., 792, Note 915.

[177] For the location of Taymā', see Simon, 83.

[178] For the arms industry in al-Yamāma, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 51 and 53. For Khaybar's weapons, see Veccia L. Vaglieri, s.v. Khaybar, *EI²*.

[179] For the conclusion of peace with the Ghaṭafān and Asad, see Rubin, "Muḥammad's Curse," 257 f.

[180] For Fadak, see Veccia L. Vaglieri, s.v. Fadak, *EI²*; and al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 347 f., and cf. 355 ff.

[181] For "The Expedition of Abū Bakr to Najd," see al-Balādhurī, s.v. Abū Bakr, 160; and al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 355. For the date of this expedition, see al-Wāqidī, *Maghāzī*, vol. 2, 722.

[182] For "The Expedition of Shujā' b. Wahb to al-Siyy," see al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 371. For the date of this expedition, see al-Wāqidī, *Maghāzī*, vol. 2, 753. For al-Siyy, see Caskel, s.v. 'Āmir b. Ṣa'ṣa'a.

[183] For the blockade imposed by Abū Jandal and Abū Baṣīr, see Rubin, "Muḥammad's Curse," 252 ff. For Syria as a supplier, see Donner, "Mecca's Food Supplies," 254 f.

[184] "Among the food imports of Mecca, cereals from al-Yamāma were also important. According to one of the stories of the *Sīra*, when as a result of Muḥammad's clever policy, the chief of one of the clans of Banū Ḥanīfa, Thumāma b. Uthāl, converted to Islam, after his return home cereal import was discontinued and the Quraysh were threatened with famine" (Simon, 94 f.).

[185] For Abū Sufyān's diplomatic efforts, see Rubin, "Muḥammad's Curse," 253.

[186] Cited in Donner, "Mecca's Food Supplies," 263. Also see "Ibn Hishām's Notes," 791 f., Note 915.

[187] For Muḥammad's decision to end the blockade of Makka, see Makin, *Representing*, 132; and Eickelman, 29.

[188] Translation adapted from Rubin, "Muḥammad's Curse," 255 f.

[189] For the intensification of political rivalries in Makka, see Donner, "Mecca's Food Supplies," 264, fn. 42.

[190] For Ramla, see Watt, s.v. Abū Sufyān; M. Hinds, s.v. Mu'āwiya, *EI²*; Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 526 f.; "Ibn Hishām's Notes," 793, Note 918; and cf. al-Ṭabarī, *Biographies of the Prophet's Companions and Their Successors*, vol. 39, trans. Ella Landau-Tasseron (Albany: State University of New York Press, 1998), 177-180.

[191] For "the conquest of Mecca," see Watt, s.v. Abū Sufyān; W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. Makka, *EI²*; and Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 557.

[192] For the general amnesty, see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 550 and 553.

CHAPTER FOUR

LATE PROTO-ISLĀM

Consequences

<u>Decline of Makka</u>

For nearly a decade, Amīn raided and plundered Qurayshī caravans bound to and from

Makka. These raids achieved his goal: the surrender of Makka. The city, however,

suffered the long-term consequences. Rather than diverting commerce away from Makka

temporarily, Amīn unintentionally caused a permanent decline in Makkan trade.

Although he fulfilled his ambition of restoring the Makkan shrine (*ka'ba*) to his Banū

Hāshim clan, his raids had the opposite effect. In Makka, commerce and cult went hand

in hand. Once secondary trade routes had circumvented al-Ḥijāz, the shrine fell off the

map. Merchants and pilgrims alike bypassed this remote and dangerous destination.

There were no pilgrims left to object when Amīn destroyed the idols in the shrine.[1] On

the ground, the population was confronted with increasingly harsh realities. The

bankrupt, famine-struck city struggled back onto its feet in the immediate aftermath of

the conquest. On shaky legs, Makka was afflicted with chronic instability and poverty.

In response, Amīn devised a contingency plan to arrest its fall.

Instability

From 623 C.E. onwards, Amīn had obstructed the free movement of Makkan trade traffic.

Raids on inbound shipments aimed to cut it off from its suppliers.[2] For example,

in 624 C.E., there were two major raids, one at Badr and the other at Nakhla near al-Ṭā'if. At Nakhla, 'Abd Allāh b. Jaḥsh had managed to seize a Qurayshī caravan. Amīn had never abandoned this policy, as the raid at al-'Īṣ in 627 C.E. clearly demonstrates. Consequently, buyers and suppliers went elsewhere. In addition, he had conducted outbound raids. Amīn's plundering of caravans leaving Makka had deprived the Qurayshī merchants of their investment capital. By 624 C.E., Amīn had effectively blockaded the Makka-Syria route. For this reason, the Qurayshī commercial elite explored an alternative route to 'Irāq by way of the Najd plateau.[3] On "the expedition to al-Qarada," he commanded Zayd b. Ḥāritha and a troop of one hundred to block the passage of Ṣafwān b. Umayya's caravan to 'Irāq. Northeast of Makka, Zayd intercepted the Makkans on the foothills of Mount 'Irq (Dhāt al-'Irq) in Wādī al-'Aqīq. They ransacked the caravan and captured a hoard of gold and silver coins, as well as a handful of prisoners. Investments with a potential one hundred percent profit returned to Makka empty-handed.[4] With no capital, profits, and reinvestment, commerce and finance in Makka ground to a halt.

The high cost of war added to the city's financial burdens. Makka's defeat at the Battle of Badr had damaged its reputation as a credible middleman. Even though the Battle of Uḥud had ended with a Qurayshī victory, it was a situation of diminishing returns. The financial costs mounted when the Banū Quraysh hired over two thousand mercenaries.[5] They had committed a small fortune to winning the war. At the end of the day, Abū Sufyān had returned with prestige, but no tangible war booty. Over the course of a decade, the sustained conflict had drained Makka's resources, gradually bankrupting the city. De-urbanization soon set in. The exodus (*hijra*) from Makka had already left

many family homes (such as that of the Banū Jaḥsh) without tenants.[6] Those who were able, left the city. Homes were either vacated or altogether abandoned with their doors flung wide-open. Meanwhile, famine and disease whittled away at the remaining population. Property values in Makka plummeted. The depopulated city was in ruins. All the while, the elite clung to their diminishing wealth and the poor to their withering lives.

Poverty

During his sermon, Amīn addressed those hardest hit by 'extreme hunger' (*makhmaṣa*) and permitted them to eat "forbidden" foods such as carrion and blood: "He who is forced by extreme hunger to eat of what is forbidden, not intending to commit sin, will find the deity forgiving and merciful."[7] He also repeated his old Makkan and earlier Yathribī sermons on poverty, while simultaneously implementing similar policies to feed the hungry. The main 'recipients' of charity were kin (*dhū al-qurbā*) and the poor (*al-miskīn*). He implored the rich to aid their less fortunate relatives and the urban needy. He preached that the deity gave the rich surplus wealth (*al-faḍl*) so that it might trickle down to the impoverished. In this way, he urged his wealthy followers to practice reciprocity. The top-down redistribution of wealth was held to be morally commendable: "Such is the grace (*al-faḍl*) of the deity: He bestows it on whom he will. His grace is infinite."[8] At the same time, Amīn condemned hoarding: "Never let those who hoard the wealth which the deity has bestowed on them out of his grace (*min faḍlih^i*) think it good for them: indeed it is an evil thing for them. The riches they have hoarded shall become their fetters on the day of resurrection. It is the deity who will inherit the heavens and the earth. The deity is cognizant of all your actions."[9]

In addition to wealthy donors, Amīn designated three other sources of charity funding: (i) war booty, (ii) inheritance, and (iii) almsgiving. *War booty* largely denoted chattel or portable property seized through raids conducted by means of camelry or cavalry. He instructed, "Know that one fifth of your war booty (*ghanimatum*) shall belong to the deity, the herald (*al-rasūl)*, the herald's kindred, the orphans, the destitute, and the traveler in need: if you truly believe in the deity and what we revealed to our servant (*'alā 'abdinā*) on the day of victory, the day when the two armies met. The deity has power over all things."[10] *Inheritance* was the second means of redistributing wealth. "If relatives, orphans, or needy men are present at the division of an inheritance, give to them, too, a share of it, and speak kind words to them."[11] Lastly, Amīn preached the purification of wealth through *almsgiving*: "And they were enjoined only to serve the deity and to worship none but him, to attend their prayers and to render the alms levy (*al-zakāt*). That, surely, is the correct religion (*dīn*)."[12] As in early Yathrib, the destitute (*fuqarā'*) became 'the center of the community' in Makka.[13]

Amīn relinquished any preconceived ideas of making impoverished Makka his headquarters. After the conquest of Makka, Abū Sufyān moved to Yathrib, the seat of power.[14] The elite of Banū Quraysh followed suit. With Makka out of the loop, Yathrib remained Amīn's capital. He, however, stayed in Makka for about two weeks to preach and receive homage. He then appointed 'Attāb b. Asīd governor, making him responsible for disaster relief.[15] While in Makka, Amīn experienced an acute shock. He had faithfully executed his charge. Yet his mission remained incomplete. In order to correct the local imbalance, he had first to correct the regional imbalance. He had realized long ago that al-Yamāma was the root of iniquity and conflict in western Arabia. Peace and

stability in al-Yamāma came at a high price. The Makkan standoff that had ended with Amīn's expulsion (*hijra*) stemmed from a food crisis. It was precipitated by Aslam's embargo on cereal exports. The catalyst was the same for the futile and self-destructive Ḥāṭib Wars in Yathrib that ended with the Battle of Buʿāth.[16] This civil war that pitted clan against clan was essentially a war over food. al-Yamāma's unchallenged trade monopoly had created a food shortage, and al-Ḥijāz continued to pay dearly. In his effort to restore Makka, Amīn prepared to strike at the heart of the problem. From the pangs of hunger issued forth the pangs of war.

Restoration

Makka had been virtually destroyed by Amīn's own hand. In order to restore the city, he challenged al-Yamāma's trade monopoly. To implement an independent economic policy, he needed direct control over the market of ʿUkāẓ. The prolonged conflict in al-Ḥijāz had already partially destabilized al-Yamāma's preexisting trade network. To compensate, trade was diverted away from western Arabia. For this reason, he took measures to make al-Ḥijāz independent and self-sufficient. As a temporary commercial solution, he established a local trade circle. This, however, was only the first step. He instituted far-sighted policies deliberately meant to change the rules of the game. In this way, he engaged in a competitive struggle that challenged al-Yamāma's monopoly.

Destabilization

The annual trade fair of ʿUkāẓ was held between 'northern' Nakhla and al-Ṭāʾif. Immediately after conquering Makka, Amīn sent Khālid b. al-Walīd to destroy the old pilgrimage site at Nakhla. Thereafter, Amīn marched against al-Ṭāʾif.[17] He mobilized twelve thousand men: ten from the Makkan invasion – including the Banū Sulaym – who

were reinforced by another two thousand Makkans and nomads from the Dhubyān b. Ghaṭafān and Banū Asad. Meanwhile, under the command of Mālik b. ʿAwf, the Hawāzin laid an ambush for Amīn and his men at the oasis of Ḥunayn (about thirty miles northeast of al-Ṭāʾif). Early on in the engagement, the element of surprise worked to their advantage. Caught off-guard, Amīn's men retreated. This would nearly have guaranteed the Hawāzin victory had not Khālid regained his composure and rallied Amīn's forces. They routed the Hawāzin and its sub-branch, the Thaqīf. The unexpected reversal at the battle caught the Hawāzin off balance. The men fled to al-Ṭāʾif, leaving their families and flocks behind. Amīn seized the women, children, and camels as war booty.

Among the women captured was Shaymāʾ, the daughter of Amīn's wet nurse, Ḥalīma. Her tribe, Banū Saʿd b. Bakr, belonged to the Hawāzin. Some of these had fought with Amīn at Ḥunayn, others against him.[18] After Amīn released his milk-sister, he pursued the fugitives who took refuge with their Thaqīfī kinsmen at al-Ṭāʾif. He was accompanied there by the ʿĀmir b. Ṣaʿṣaʿa. This Hawāzin subgroup deserted to his side after the defeat at Ḥunayn.[19] al-Ṭāʾif stood on a promontory surrounded by fertile villages. With the capture of Makka, it was left without a market for its fruit produce. With the defeat of the Hawāzin, it was also left without nomadic support. Its route to ʿUkāẓ blocked, it capitulated.[20] Subsequently, Amīn's numbers surged. Dependent upon sedentary supplies, the surrounding nomads were compelled after the fall of Makka and al-Ṭāʾif to join the tribal prophet. In exchange, he affirmed their rights above all others to contested pasture districts and water wells.[21] With the capture of the markets at ʿUkāẓ,

and Khaybar to the north, al-Ḥijāz was once and for all cut off from the invisible hand of al-Yamāma.

Timed around the fall harvest, al-Yamāma's annual market cycle commenced at Dūmat al-Jandal in November.[22] From July through September, the markets set up shop in al-Ḥijāz. From August to September in the month of Dhū al-Ḥijja, the markets opened at Dhū al-Majāz, a day away from Makka. Although it was not a commercial destination, pilgrims once flocked to the sacred grove of Nakhla. During this month, Makka benefited from lucrative secondary trade and pilgrimage. In September, the markets cycled north to Nuṭāt Khaybar. Finally, in October, the trade sequence came to a close at Ḥajr in al-Yamāma.[23] Like a water-wheel, once complete, the market cycle was bound to repeat. However, Amīn's incessant raiding and the seizure of both Khaybar and ʿUkāẓ destabilized the west Arabian trade routes, thereby forcing their closure. Rather than proceeding from Rābiya in the south to ʿUkāẓ in the northwest, trade now flowed from Rābiya to Najrān, then directly to Ḥajr in al-Yamāma by way of al-Falaj (SEE MAP 4.1).[24] As a result, ʿUkāẓ, Majanna, Dhū al-Majāz, and Khaybar were simply cut out of the market cycle. In the month of Dhū al-Ḥijja, neither pilgrims nor residual trade now made their way from Dhū al-Majāz to Makka.

Restructuring

To counteract the negative effects on al-Ḥijāz's economy, Amīn established his own shorter circle of market fairs (*mawāsim*) (SEE MAP 4.1).[25] Although this local circle was pilgrimage-oriented, it was coupled with trade. He tried to jumpstart Makka's economy through pilgrimage tourism. For this purpose, he had already desecrated Nakhla, Makka's competitor and the foremost pilgrimage site in the area. He hoped to draw

pilgrims in to Makka by word of mouth: "Exhort all people to make the pilgrimage. They will come to you on foot and on the backs of swift camels from every distant quarter."[26] The new market circle started at 'Ukāẓ, moved to Majanna, and ended in Minā and 'Arafa. At times, Badr and Makka proper were also incorporated into this sequence.[27] Amīn arranged an annual pilgrimage (ḥajj) in the sacred month of Dhū al-Ḥijja. He encouraged commerce at the pilgrimage sites by declaring that "[i]t is not accounted against you as a crime if you seek the bounty of your lord at the fairs of the pilgrimage (fī mawāsim al-ḥajj)."[28] Furthermore, he set up 'offices' and institutions paralleling those at 'Ukāẓ. To the pilgrimage sites, he assigned a peacekeeper, a market controller, and an arbiter. Unlike in old 'Ukāẓ, he forbade prestige contests in his jurisdiction.[29] Instead, he replaced this destructive practice with his own notions of the fair 'circulation of wealth.' These emphasized the ethical bond between the affluent and the destitute. For example, during the annual pilgrimage, the wealthy sacrificed animals to atone for their sins, while simultaneously feeding the hungry. He preached that "[t]he deity has made the shrine (ka'ba), the sacred house, the sacred month, and the sacrificial offerings with their garlands, eternal values for mankind."[30]

At the same time, Amīn outlawed 'the practice of intercalation' in which 'time-reckoners' annually switched the observance of 'sacred and profane' months.[31] Consequently, the Yamāmī and Makkan calendars were no longer synchronized. The sacred months had forbidden violence, thereby allowing pan-Arab trade. This was no longer feasible with Amīn's calendar reform. From this point onward, merchant caravans in al-Ḥijāz travelled safely only during the four sacred months, and only en route to the pilgrimage sites.[32] The incompatibility of the Yamāmī and Ḥijāzī networks rendered

east-west trade a thing of the past. Amīn's restructuring temporarily sheltered Makka; at the same time, it also isolated al-Ḥijāz. The long-term solution was the conquest and economic unification of western Arabia.
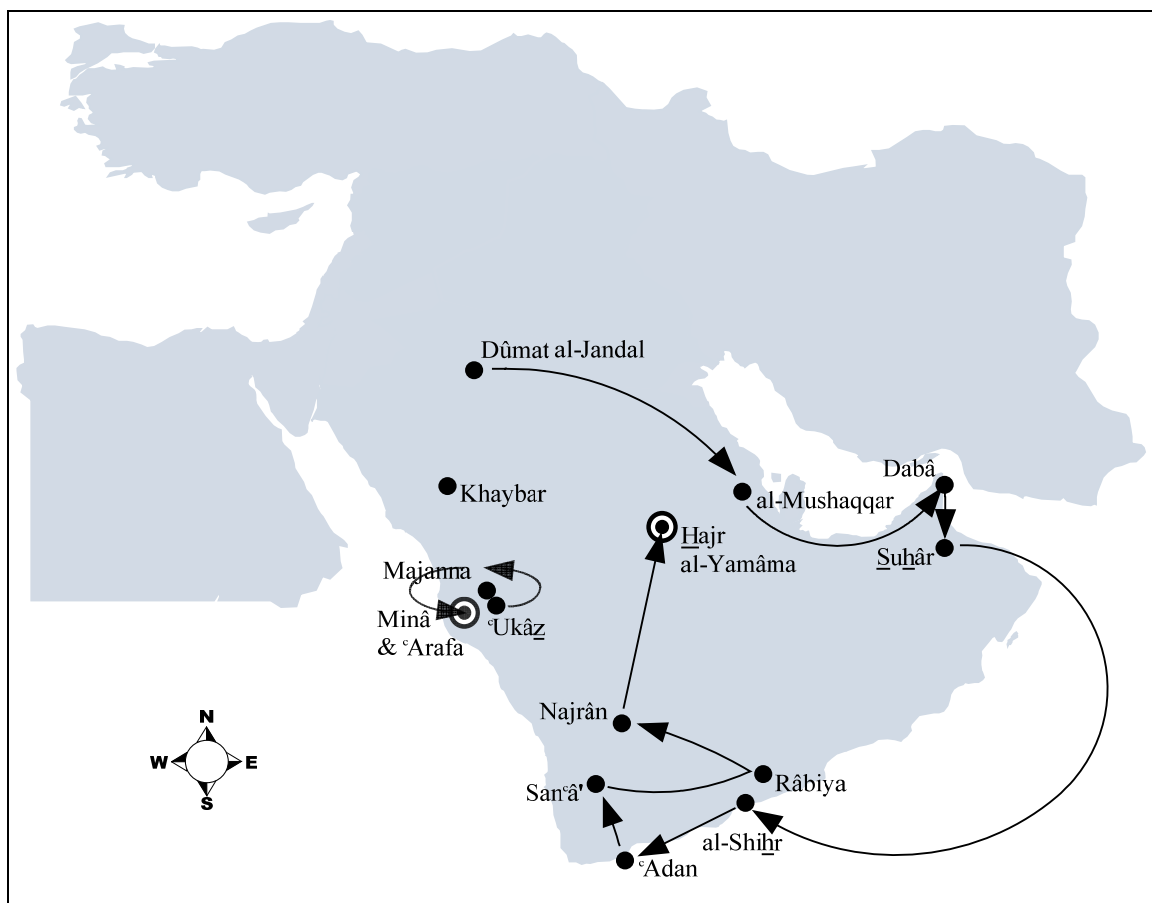
Map 4.1: Trade Circle

Confrontation

Trade Wars

Amīn's independent trade circle closed off ʿUkāẓ to al-Yamāma. However, control of this transit point for goods was meaningless without access to the source of goods. For this purpose, he campaigned north.[33] His objective: the emporium of Dūmat al-Jandal. Following the fall of al-Ṭāʾif, he returned to Yathrib and made preparations for war on

the northern frontier. After a second setback at Dūmat al-Jandal in 627/8 C.E., he rethought his strategy.

Opening

Amīn had attempted to bypass the northern depot by reopening a direct route to Syria. Independent access meant channeling Syrian trade through Khaybar to Yathrib. For this task, in August of 629 C.E., he had dispatched Zayd b. Ḥāritha with a force of three thousand. Accompanying them was Khālid b. al-Walīd. After camping in Wādī al-Qurā, the expedition pressed on through dangerous territory. The Quḍā'a, kinsmen of the Banū Kalb and the keepers of Dūmat al-Jandal, attacked Zayd and his men at Mu'ta.[34] Zayd and two de facto commanders (*amīr-s*) were killed: 'Abd Allāh b. Rawāḥa and Ja'far b. Abī Ṭālib (who had just returned from al-Yamāma). Khālid ordered a general retreat. The death toll at Mu'ta was high. The Yathribīs treated those who returned alive as deserters. Abū Hurayra's cousin confronted him point-blank, "Were you not a coward on the battle-day of Mu'ta!"[35] At a loss for words, Abū Hurayra hung his head in shame. That winter, Amīn ordered 'Amr b. al-'Āṣ to lead a retaliatory raid at Dhāt al-Salāsil against three Quḍā'a subgroups (the Balī, 'Udhra, and Balqayn).[36] He reached their territory with three hundred men. Greatly outnumbered, he requested reinforcements. When two hundred more arrived, he made a raid against the Quḍā'a who immediately scattered and blended into their surroundings. The expedition returned with no spoils other than some sheep and camels. The fact remained that the defeat at Mu'ta was a major setback.

In 630 C.E., Amīn readied another campaign north, this time to Tabūk.[37] The site was a prime staging ground against Dūmat al-Jandal. Beset with serious financial

difficulties, the preparations proceeded slowly. The nomads refused to contribute to the campaign fund. Moreover, the specter of failure hung over the expedition, and the proposed summer launch for the campaign met with strong resistance from all quarters. Even Ibn Ubayy, who commanded more men than Amīn himself, resolved to remain behind.[38] In an attempt to overcome these obstacles, Amīn 'threatened' to unleash holy war and hell-fire upon the stragglers.[39] In an effort to boost recruitment and to aid those unable to equip themselves, he designated them eligible for charity. He implored the rich to provide them with weapons, horses, and rations to fight in the campaign. After all, the capture of Dūmat al-Jandal would be a boon for business. Accordingly, the wealthy merchant 'Uthmān b. 'Affān donated a sizeable sum. Thereafter, the 'raid of hardship' set out. Rather than risk an engagement, the 'local chiefs' around Tabūk capitulated. From there, Amīn dispatched his third expedition to Dūmat al-Jandal. Khālid reluctantly set out with four hundred and twenty horsemen. They traversed the hazardous territory around Dūma where the Banū Kalb dwelt. The expedition returned after a skirmish with al-Akdar, the head of the largest district of Dūmat al-Jandal. Unable to lay siege to the emporium, the Tabūk expedition fell far short of achieving its original objective, which again was Dūmat al-Jandal.[40]

Closure

The political fallout of the unpopular and unsuccessful Tabūk campaign preoccupied Amīn. In order to quell internal dissent and encourage compliance, he made an example of his remaining enemies at home. It was during this time in October 630 C.E. that Abū 'Āmir, the Muslim leader-in-exile, returned to Yathrib.[41] He took refuge in the mosque of Ibn Maẓ'ūn in Qubā'. His arrival lifted the spirits of Muslims among the 'Amr b.

'Awf clan who had withheld their monetary support for Amīn's poorly financed expedition to Tabūk. So as to silence the opposition, Amīn declared: "And those who have taken a mosque in opposition and unbelief, and to divide the Mu'mins, and as a listening post for those who earlier fought against the deity and his herald, will swear 'We desire nothing but good.' But the deity testifies they are truly liars."[42] He forbade the Mu'mins to pray in Ibn Maẓ'ūn's mosque by saying: "You shall not set foot in it. It is more fitting that you should pray in a mosque founded on piety from the very first day."[43] He redirected the Mu'mins to his own mosque in Qubā'. Therein, he said: "…[Y]ou shall find men who would keep themselves pure. The deity loves those that purify themselves."[44] After he branded Abū 'Āmir 'the sinner,' the Muslim 'opposition' mosque of Ibn Maẓ'ūn was torched.[45] When Amīn delivered his fiery sermon, he asked his captive audience "[w]ho is a better man, he who laid the foundation of his building on righteousness from the deity and his approval, or one who laid the foundation of his building on the brink of a crumbling precipice, so that his building will fall with him into the fire of hell? The deity does not guide the wrongdoing dissenters."[46] The last bastion of resistance went up in flames. Abū 'Āmir fled once more into exile; those still loyal who remained in southern Yathrib dissimulated. As a sign for all to see, Amīn's mosque stood alone and unchallenged in Qubā'. Soon thereafter in 631 C.E., his political rival Ibn Ubayy passed away. al-Khazraj's leadership now fell to one loyal to Amīn: the Anṣārī leader Sa'd b. 'Ubāda (d. 636 C.E.).[47] Although Amīn managed to consolidate his hold over Yathrib and its politics, with no supply hub to feed his trade circle, the oasis city remained economically vulnerable. As a last resort, he opened the door to diplomacy.

Politics

The negotiations between Yathrib and al-Yamāma were born out of necessity. Khaybar was the turning point in Yamāmī-Yathribī relations. On the one hand, al-Yamāma's demand outpaced its agricultural production; therefore, it increasingly required cereal and fruit imports. As the second-to-last stop in the trade cycle, Nuṭāt Khaybar served to funnel barley and dates into al-Yamāma. However, Amīn's siege of Khaybar disrupted al-Yamāma's secondary food source. This created a temporary crisis at the center. For the first time, supplies were redirected away from al-Yamāma to Yathrib and Makka in al-Ḥijāz. For this reason, al-Yamāma turned to Najrān in northern al-Yaman. This site could not only salvage and secure al-Yamāma's network, but it could also satisfy al-Yamāma's food demand by means of its fertile northwestern oasis.[48] To counter this development, Amīn opened a southern front against al-Yamāma. In exchange for their protection, he forged an alliance with a group from Najrān.[49] A wartime provision of their agreement stipulated that they equip his forces with coats of mail, horses, and camels. In 630 C.E., he sent Quṭba b. ʿĀmir b. Ḥadīda on his behalf to conquer the settlement of Talāba in al-Yaman. After its subjugation, Ṣurad b. ʿAbd Allāh, a nomad of the Azd Shanūʾa, attacked the neighboring Yamanī settlement of Jurash in the name of Amīn.[50] Following a siege, the sedentary population sued for peace. Amīn then appointed (wallā) Abū Sufyān to oversee Jurash. Despite the fact that Amīn's forces had made significant inroads into al-Yaman, he had the weaker hand at the negotiating table. Yet he alone held the keys to the shrine (kaʿba) of al-Raḥmān, the symbol of Aslam's authority. He was in a position to bargain.

Clean Succession

While Amīn conquered Makka, power in al-Yamāma changed hands. In around 630 C.E.,

Hawdha passed away, whereupon Aslam accomplished a peaceful transfer of power. As

Hawdha's heir apparent, he assumed the regal title 'lord of al-Yamāma' (*ṣāḥib al-*

yamāma).[51] In his person, he combined the functionary and religious (*al-imāma*)

leadership of al-Yamāma. Although his succession went largely unchallenged, there

naturally existed a silent opposition. Leading the pack was Thumāma, the nomadic chief

of the Banū Ḥanīfa who dwelt in the Qarqarī district.[52] Other notables included the land

magnate Mujjāʿa and those from the royal Ḥanafī clan of Hawdha, the Banū Suḥaym b.

Murra of the Qurrān district. Located north of Ḥajr and Jaww at the foothills of the

Ṭuwayq escarpment, the inhabitants of Qurrān specialized in commerce and agriculture.

This district's main nomadic malcontents included the Banū Yashkur and the nomadic

branch of the Banū Suḥaym. In addition, concentrated at the Namira mine around the al-

ʿIrḍ district neighboring Thumāma's nomads were a negligible number of discontented

Banū Kilāb. None of these, however, posed a serious challenge to Aslam. His ardent

supporters included his diplomat, al-Rajjāl, and his military general, Muḥakkim.[53]

In geographical terms, divided by the Ṭuwayq escarpment, al-Yamāma totaled

eight districts, three in the west (Qarqarī, al-ʿIrḍ, al-Karma) and five in the east (al-Faqī,

Qurrān, al-ʿĀriḍ, al-Khaḍārim, al-Falaj). Aslam reigned supreme in the fertile east, while

the desolate lands to the west fell within Thumāma's purview. Thumāma controlled the

Qarqarī and al-ʿIrḍ districts; whereas, al-Karma in the far north was divided between him

and Aslam. This district's artisans and tradesmen favored the sedentary governance of

Aslam; on the other hand, its semi-nomadic population who dwelt in the area's sand

dunes and flat plains leaned towards Thumāma.[54] Also geographically caught between

Aslam and Thumāma, the eastern Qurrān district challenged Aslam's authority. Its sedentary inhabitants pursued an untenable policy of nonalignment. In their midst lived Thumāma's enemies, the Banū Qushayr, a subgroup of the ʿĀmir b. Ṣaʿṣaʿa. This semi-sedentary clan farmed the Qurrān (northern) and al-Falaj (southern) districts of eastern al-Yamāma.[55] Although split in two, Thumāma could not stand up to Aslam in al-Yamāma; but then neither could Amīn in Arabia.

Dirty Diplomacy

In exchange for blockading Makka, Amīn appointed Thumāma as his agent and representative (*ʿāmil*) in al-Yamāma.[56] They both colluded against Aslam. Thumāma proposed to lure Aslam into Yathrib: "If he will answer positively to anyone, he will answer me and maybe he will come."[57] Amīn agreed. Thumāma set off straight away for the capital where he ingratiated himself with Aslam. Day after day, he implored him to visit Yathrib. Aslam almost acquiesced. However, al-Rajjāl suspected foul play and cautioned him against this rash course of action: "Do not do this; if you go to him [viz. Amīn], he will kill you."[58] In his stead, Aslam dispatched a body double fully veiled from head to toe in the garments of a holy man.[59] Led by the royalist Salmā b. Ḥanẓala al-Suḥaymī, this delegation went to test the waters. Accompanied by Muḥakkim's armed escort, Salmā, al-Rajjāl, Mujjāʿa, Ṭalq b. ʿAlī, and the other delegates arrived in Yathrib. They stayed at the home of Ramla, Aslam's former wife.[60]

When she was around the age of seventeen, Abū Sufyān had married off Ramla to Aslam in order to guarantee the shipment of Yamāmī grain to Makka.[61] In accordance with Aslam's moral law, once she bore him a son (Shuraḥbīl), he released her from wedlock and returned her safely to Makka. Thereafter, Ramla remarried ʿUbayd Allāh b.

Jaḥsh al-Asadī with whom she emigrated back to al-Yamāma. She bore him a daughter, Ḥabība. After their divorce, Ramla (known as Umm Ḥabība) married Khālid b. Saʿīd b. al-ʿĀṣ. Once this marriage was dissolved, she repatriated to al-Ḥijāz. In order to lift Thumāma's blockade on Makka, Abū Sufyān arranged her marriage (then at the age of thirty-five) to Amīn.

Under the impression that her former spouse Aslam was with the deputation, Amīn baited the trap. Ramla extended her hospitality by graciously offering bread, yoghurt, meat, and dates. To avoid detection by Ramla, Aslam's double stayed behind with the baggage. This behavior, however, was strange for a head of state, and no doubt drew suspicion. When meeting the delegates the following day, Amīn approached the imposter.[62] He immediately saw through the deception and treachery. Alarmed and unnerved, he warned the veiled assailant not to take a single step: "If you draw near, then surely the deity will do something to you, and if you turn your back, then surely the deity will annihilate you. I see you to be none other than him whom I saw concerning that which I saw," Amīn blurted out.[63] Aslam had pulled the wool over his eyes. With the trap sprung, Amīn lashed out against the duplicitous delegates. Holding a date palm branch in his hand, he adamantly declared, "Even if you asked me for this branch…I would not give it to you."[64] In a somewhat curt and abrupt manner, he then told them to negotiate with his spokesman, Thābit b. Qays b. Shammās (d. 633 C.E.).

Naturally, the talks failed to produce a trade agreement. Abiding by the policy that Amīn had so clearly laid out, Thābit refused to give an inch. The deadlocked parties established a modus vivendi. Amīn retained control over his possessions in the west, Aslam over those in the east. During this visit, al-Rajjāl met with prospective informants.

When Amīn walked by, al-Rajjāl was in the company of Abū Hurayra (a disgraced derelict with nothing to lose) and Furāt b. Ḥayyān al-'Ijlī (a guide captured during the raid at Dhāt 'Irq who had chosen conversion over death). Aghast at this sight, Amīn passed a damning judgment: "A molar tooth of one of you in hell will be as big as the mountain of Uḥud."[65] Still concerned about harboring potential enemy spies as well as to ensure Furāt's loyalty, Amīn sweetened the offer by promising him lands in al-Yamāma. In the meantime, using land as an incentive for Mujjā'a to betray Aslam, Amīn struck his own under-the-table deal. He granted Mujjā'a a written title for uncultivated lands:

> In the name of the merciful and compassionate deity.
> This is a document that the 'praised one' (*muḥammad*), the herald of
> the deity, wrote for Mujjā'a b. Murāra b. Sulmī.
> I bestow upon you al-Ghūra, Ghurāba, and al-Ḥubl.
> Whoever demands proof from you, then refer them to me.[66]

Salmā also had a sudden change of heart. Aided and abetted by Amīn, he desired to throw off the yoke of Aslam and restore the royal house of Hawdha to the Yamāmī throne.[67] In a 'magnanimous' gesture intended to win the other delegates to his side, Amīn presented each with five ounces of silver. He even afforded this special privilege to Aslam's body double whose lot, he said, was no worse than theirs.[68] When the delegation returned to al-Yamāma, al-Rajjāl reported to Aslam that war was imminent, "Two rams will butt horns, the one that we love more is our ram."[69]

Insurrection

Counter-Ideology

With the news that Amīn was intent on war, Aslam consolidated his position in al-Yamāma. After Heraclius' invasion of the Persian Empire and the death of the Sāsānid emperor, Khusraw II (d. 628 C.E.), outside influence on Arabia had rapidly declined.[70]

Aslam was no longer able to rely on the Persians for military support. What is more, he sensed something was amiss. Thumāma and the Banū Ḥanīfa clans were plotting against him. In order to counter this domestic threat, Aslam had to improvise quickly. He recruited auxiliary forces from neighboring nomadic groups. Meanwhile, as Thumāma stoked the fire in al-Yamāma, Amīn launched a propaganda campaign against Aslam. Now in a position of power, Amīn revived his counterclaim to exclusive prophetic authority: He, and he alone, was Muḥammad (the 'praised one').

Consolidation

Where Hawdha failed, Aslam succeeded. He brought over to his side a subgroup of the Tamīm b. Murr confederacy.[71] To accommodate them, he established a garrison in al-Yamāma where he settled the nomadic Banū Usayyid clan of the 'Amr (of Tamīm). This clan's mobility provided a tactical advantage in the fight against Thumāma. However, his bold move to station nomads among the sedentary population had serious repercussions. The farmers looked upon these 'hamlets of the allies' (*qurā al-aḥālīf*) as nests of criminal activity.[72] These culprits were protected from retribution in the violence-free zone (*ḥaram*). Whenever they raided orchards in the countryside, they took shelter in the garrison. The angry sedentary population therefore appealed directly to Aslam. He considered their case carefully. The nomads were no doubt a nuisance, but on the other hand, they were a necessary evil. The survival of al-Yamāma depended upon mounting an effective defense against Thumāma. In other words, the Banū Usayyid formed al-Yamāma's first line of defense. On the verge of war, Aslam made the difficult decision of siding with the nomads. He pronounced a religious 'verdict' in favor of the Banū Usayyid:

> By the darkest night,
> By the blackest wolf,
> By the mountain goat,
> Usayyid has not defiled a sacred thing.[73]

The plowmen challenged his decision by citing the fact that the nomads were directly liable for the wrongful damage of property.[74] He turned down their appeal. Left to their own devices, the Banū Usayyid continued to operate with impunity. This time, during their raid, they cut down some date palm groves. Once more, the farmers sued Aslam to hold the nomads accountable. He again refused:

> By the obscure night,
> By the restless wolf,
> Usayyid never cut anything,
> Neither succulent nor dry.[75]

The frustrated farmers insisted that "[t]he Usayyid did cut the fresh fruit of the palms and broke down the dry fences."[76] Well aware that the nomads were at fault, Aslam deliberately turned a blind eye to the plight of his fellow farmers. He told them, "Go! Return, for you have no claim."[77] In their eyes, he had betrayed his sedentary roots. To assure full cooperation, he issued a public proclamation urging the people of al-Yamāma to patiently bear all losses suffered at the hands of the Banū Usayyid (of Tamīm). He reassured them that al-Raḥmān would mete out justice in the hereafter and declared that "Banū Tamīm is a pure and independent tribe, there should be no hatred towards them, nor should they pay collective compensatory damages (*itāwa^tun*). Let us be good neighbors as long as we live, let us protect them from every person. At our death their fate (*amruhum*) will be determined by al-Raḥmān."[78]

Meanwhile in al-Ḥijāz, Amīn struck an alliance with the most powerful branch of the Tamīm confederacy, the Banū Saʿd b. Zayd Manāt.[79] In addition to belonging to the Tamīm, the Banū Saʿd also held membership in the Ribāb confederacy founded by Ḍabba

b. Udd. This confederacy included the Thawr ʿAbd Manāt b. Udd, ʿAdī, Taym, and ʿUkl

b. ʿAwf. Though a potent ally, nonetheless, the leadership of the Banū Saʿd was divided

along clan lines. al-Zibriqān b. Badr commanded the majority of the tribe, while his

rival, Qays b. ʿĀṣim, vied with him for power. Consequently, Qays' loyalty to al-

Zibriqān and Amīn wavered. Despite this, the Banū Saʿd sent 'reinforcements' to

Thumāma. All the while, Mālik b. Nuwayra (d. ca. 632/3 C.E.), the chief of another

major branch of the Tamīm (i.e., the Banū Thaʿlaba b. Yarbūʿ b. Ḥanẓala), treaded

dangerously between the Banū Usayyid b. ʿAmr and the Banū Saʿd.[80]

Propaganda

In the losing war of words against Aslam, Amīn radically altered his strategy. Previously

plagued by the menacing Makkans, he had refused to be associated with al-Raḥmān of al-

Yamāma. With the conquest of Makka, the old stigma was lifted. Rather than rejecting

his enemy's religion, he now embraced it. As the earlier episode with Ibn Maẓʿūn made

abundantly clear, the Muslim and Mu'min religions were commensurable; however,

leadership authority (*al-amr*) was non-negotiable. Consequently, Amīn made Islām his

own. He announced to his followers: "This day I have perfected your religion (*dīn*) for

you and completed my favor to you. I have chosen Islām to be your religion (*dīn*)."[81]

No longer was Islām to be the exclusive ideological domain of Aslam. This deep

incursion struck at the heart of the enemy. Amīn further held that Islām had become

corrupt, as the illiterate masses who followed Aslam had committed the grave sin of

association (*shirk*). Identifying ʿAbd al-Raḥmān (Aslam) with al-Raḥmān (the deity),

these erring 'Muslims' had violated monotheism's basic precept by associating a partner

with the deity. Consequently, Amīn grouped these 'associators' (*al-mushrikūn*) with the

polytheists. He himself accordingly came as a 'renewer of religion' to purify Islām.[82] In

February 631 C.E., he issued an ultimatum to these 'associators':

> A proclamation from the deity and his herald to the people (*al-nās*) on
> the day of the greater pilgrimage:
>
> The deity and his herald are disassociated from the 'associators.' If you
> repent, it shall be well with you; but if you pay no heed, know that you
> shall not be immune from the deity's judgment…When the sacred
> months are over, slay the 'associators' wherever you find them. Arrest
> them, besiege them, and lie in ambush everywhere for them…Evil is
> what they do. They treat the Mu'min ruthlessly. And it is they who are
> the transgressors…Fight them: The deity will chastise them at your
> hands and humble them. He will grant you victory over them and heal
> the hearts of the neo-tribe (*qawm*) of Mu'mins.[83]

By threatening violence against the 'associators,' he resolved to bring Aslam's subjects

into submission. At the same time, he coordinated a two-pronged propaganda campaign

with Thumāma, who was then in al-Yamāma.

Thumāma roused the Banū Ḥanīfa to rebellion: "If you hear and obey me (*amrī*),

then you will be rightly guided (*turshadū*). Two prophets (*nabiyyān^i*) never share in a

single authority (*amr wāḥid*)."[84] The nomadic chief proceeded to assess the relative

merits of the two claimants; he first cited Amīn's verses:

> In the name of the merciful and compassionate deity. The scripture (*al-
> kitāb*) is sent down from the deity, the omnipotent, the omniscient, who
> forgives sin and accepts repentance. His punishment is stern, and his
> bounty infinite. There is no deity but him. All shall return to him.[85]

Unequivocally, he declaimed that "this is the speech of the deity."[86] He then mockingly

recited Aslam's verses:

> O immaculate frog,
> Neither do you refuse drink,
> Nor do you muddy the water.[87]

"Surely you will see," he concluded, "this speech does not originate from a deity.

Muḥammad [viz. Amīn] has merited authority (*al-amr*)."[88] He then openly denounced

Aslam and declared his allegiance to Amīn. This propaganda provoked discontent and

disagreement among the Banū Ḥanīfa. To counteract these negative effects, Aslam delivered a moving speech of his own:

> O Banū Ḥanīfa! I want you to tell me, on what [grounds] are the Quraysh more entitled than you to the prophethood (*al-nubuwwa*) and the imāmate (*al-imāma*)? By god, they are no more numerous than you and no braver. Indeed, your country (*bilād*) is more extensive than their country, and your wealth (*amwāl*) is greater than their wealth.[89]

He rallied them to his cause. The battle for the hearts and minds of the people of al-Yamāma was well underway.

Incursions

Thumāma's ambition brought al-Yamāma to the brink of civil war. His public denunciation of Aslam proved to be a powerful propaganda weapon. The call for revolution spread far and wide. At Amīn's behest, he instigated riots in al-Yamāma.[90] Aslam had underestimated the strength of the enemy within. However, despite the prevailing social chaos, both the Banū Usayyid and Aslam's sedentary forces stood by his side, ready to defend against attack. After forcibly quelling the civil unrest, Aslam's general, Muḥakkim, beat down the petty village heads responsible. Although Aslam prevailed, the opposition movement continued to gain momentum. This only encouraged Thumāma to take further bold action.

Dissent

The resistance attracted farmers in the heart of al-Yamāma who felt slighted by the favoritism shown to the Banū Usayyid nomads. Even respected members of the community such as the ambitious friend of al-Rajjāl, Ibn 'Umayr al-Yashkurī, sided with the dissidents and incited the population against Aslam.[91] Ibn 'Umayr secretly circulated

an inflammatory poem imploring the loyal subjects of al-Yamāma to bravely answer the

call of Thumāma b. Uthāl:

> O Suʿād ('good fortune') of the heart, daughter of Uthāl, my night has grown long by the intrigue of al-Rajjāl;
>
> Verily it, O Suʿād ('good fortune'), is one of the changes of fortune working against you, like the intrigue of the imposter (*al-dajjāl*);
>
> The tribe (*al-qawm*) was seduced (*ka-fitna^{ti}*) by the testimony (*shahāda*), but the deity, the possessor of power and perspicacity, is omnipotent;
>
> That which they say is not equal to a sabot strap, since it is not shod with a latchet;
>
> Verily my religion (*dīn*) is the religion of the prophet (*al-nabī*) and there are among the tribe (*al-qawm*) some men for the right guidance (*al-hudā*), like me;
>
> Muḥakkim b. Ṭufayl has destroyed the tribe (*al-qawm*), and has destroyed some men whom we do not consider to be men;
>
> Today, 'Aslam the apostate' (*musaylima*) seized from them their authority (*amr*), and they will not return to it till the end of days;
>
> I said to my soul that your contending in taking to unbelief (*taʿāṭīk^a lil-kufr^i*) is the reviling of the speech of the wretched;
>
> Perhaps the souls who are unhappy with the authority (*al-amr*) will have a delight similar to being released from the hobble;
>
> If my fate, by virtue of the natural disposition (*fiṭra^{ti} llāh^i*) for the deity, is true religion (*ḥanīf^{an}*), then I don't mind![92]

These verses spread like wildfire among the sedentary population to the point that women

and children sang it aloud while working in the fields.[93] Incensed by these accusations,

the authorities searched for the anonymous poet to silence him. In the meantime, this

popular poem took root and produced its desired effect. It polarized the populace and

turned public opinion against Aslam. Yamāmīs from all walks of life suddenly came out

of the woodwork to resist his regime. Some defected, some spied, and others concealed

their loyalty to Amīn.[94] The stage was set for civil war.

Civil War

Thumāma b. Uthāl used the perfect pretext to raid Aslam's territory and ignite a civil war in al-Yamāma. His father, Uthāl, had been slain by the Banū Qushayr. As a subgroup of the 'Āmir b. Ṣa'ṣa'a, they alone withheld their allegiance to Amīn after the Battle of Ḥunayn. Thumāma then approached Amīn saying, "O herald of the deity, the Banū Qushayr killed Uthāl in the days of ignorance. So permit me to make a raid against them."[95] Amīn authorized the first strike. The Banū Ḥanīfa clans under Thumāma mobilized. Reinforced by the Banū Sa'd and the Banū Suḥaym nomads, they attacked villages loyal to Aslam. At the same time, Mujjā'a and the royal clan of Hawdha staged a palace coup on behalf of Hawdha's son.[96] They hoped to install this prince, Ṣabira, to the throne. While Aslam subdued the royalists, Muḥakkim took the field. He clashed with Thumāma's coalition at Duran and Sihām.[97] In both battles, victory fell to Aslam. The Banū Sa'd retreated. Falling back west of the Ṭuwayq escarpment, Thumāma made haste to dispatch couriers to Amīn with word of this major setback. Barely escaping, Mujjā'a fled to Yathrib. The tide had turned.

Amīn had committed an unprovoked act of aggression. His proxy war jeopardized the modus vivendi between them. Aslam sent a clear message to Amīn, reminding him of their standing agreement. Upon their arrival in Yathrib, his two messengers requested an audience. In Amīn's presence, the first envoy read aloud the letter:

> In the name of the merciful deity, al-Raḥmān.
>
> From: 'Abd al-Raḥmān [viz. Aslam], the herald of the deity
> To: Amīn
>
> To us belongs half the earth, and to the Quraysh belongs half of it.
> However, the Quraysh are unjust.

Peace be upon you.

Scribed by 'Amr b. al-Jarūd al-Ḥanafī.[98]

Amīn's blood boiled when he heard the messenger profess his allegiance to Aslam's prophetic authority. He said: "You lie! Seize this one and kill him!"[99] When his men rushed to collar the messenger, the other messenger held on tightly to his companion's waist. After an intense tug of war, Amīn cooled down and released both messengers. They returned to al-Yamāma bearing Amīn's reply:

In the name of the merciful and compassionate deity.

From: Muḥammad [viz. Amīn], the herald of the deity
To: 'Aslam the apostate' (*musaylima*), the mendacious (*al-kadhdhāb*)

The earth belongs to the deity. It is inherited by whomever he wills
from among his servants. The end belongs to the god-fearing.[100]

Peace be upon those who heed the right guidance.

Scribed by Ubayy b. Ka'b.[101]

It became crystal clear to Aslam that Amīn had no intent to cease and desist.

At about this time, Mujjā'a arrived in Yathrib. He had with him Khawla bt. Ja'far, a highborn Yamāmī woman from the royal household, whom 'Alī b. Abī Ṭālib later wed.[102] Mujjā'a held Amīn responsible for the death of his brother, who had been killed in the crossfire by Amīn's Banū Sa'd and Asad allies. He wanted compensation in blood money (*diya*) amounting to one hundred camels. This, however, was by far the least of Amīn's concerns.[103] More bad news reached him from the battlefront. Thumāma's forces had lost the battle for Ḥajr. When Amīn's attempt to take al-Yamāma by direct assault failed, he prepared for a massive strike on several fronts.[104] He redoubled his efforts to cut Aslam's supply line at Najrān. In December 631 C.E., he deployed 'Alī from Qubā' with a force of three hundred against al-Yaman. He then sent reinforcements there under the command of Khālid b. al-Walīd. Simultaneously, he tried

to outflank al-Yamāma by going around it by way of greater al-Baḥrayn. When these efforts met with little success, he developed a fallback position. He was determined to open the northern route to Syria in order to resupply his own forces. To fund this war effort, he began to collect annual taxes from loyal nomads neighboring Yathrib and Makka; in effect, this centralized the nascent city-state (*al-madīna*) of Yathrib.[105] All the while, he coordinated a full-scale war against al-Yamāma. But right before launching this war, he fell seriously ill.

Endgame

Final Stage

The major north Arabian tribes of ʿAdnān claimed descent from either of two ancestors, Rabīʿa or Muḍar. The Banū Ḥanīfa belonged to the Rabīʿa, the Banū Quraysh to the Muḍar.[106] When Amīn disseminated his propaganda, it was infused with a virulent form of tribal chauvinism. The violent nature of his and Aslam's rivalry intensified and took on a life of its own. As a result, their contested claims were overwhelmed by tribal identity. Irrespective of the veracity of their claims, nomads affiliated with the Muḍar paid homage to Amīn. Those of Rabīʿa threw their lot in with Aslam. As one tribesman of the Rabīʿa aptly phrased it, "A liar (*kadhdhāb*) of Rabīʿa is dearer to me than a liar (*kadhdhāb*) of Muḍar."[107] Truth was in the tribe. Therefore, chauvinism, and not legitimacy, determined loyalty. Consequently, legitimacy developed "in an anti-authoritarian direction."[108] 'Recognition' was no longer based upon the 'legitimacy' of the claimant to authority (*al-amr*); rather, 'legitimacy' was now based upon the 'recognition' of the claimant to authority (*al-amr*).

Death

In June 632 C.E., Amīn passed away.[109] As a matter of course, the death of the tribal prophet and chief signaled the dissolution and split of the Mu'min neo-tribe into its constituent elements. The Anṣār neo-clan under Saʻd b. ʻUbāda – the head of the old al-Khazraj clan of Banū Qayla – decided to go their own way. The Qurayshī-Muhājirūn neo-clan opposed their secession. Appealing to tribal chauvinism, Abū Bakr argued that "...the Arabs [viz. Muḍar] will recognize this leadership authority (*hādhā al-amr*) only in this clan (*al-ḥayy*) of Quraysh, they being the best of the Arabs in descent (*nasab*[an]) and territory (*dār*[an])."[110] He then presented two Qurayshī 'candidates' for the chieftaincy, ʻUmar b. al-Khaṭṭāb and Abū ʻUbayda b. al-Jarrāḥ. The first was a Mu'min disciple of Amīn, and the second was an early 'Muslim' disciple of ʻUthmān b. Maẓʻūn. Naturally, neither met with the universal approval of the Anṣār. They insisted on dividing Amīn's leadership authority (*al-amr*) two-ways: "A leader (*amīr*) from us and a leader (*amīr*) from you."[111] As Saʻd b. ʻUbāda's rival, Bashīr b. Saʻd (d. 633 C.E.) openly supported his Qurayshī candidate, Abū Bakr. He said, "In truth Muḥammad [viz. Amīn] was from Quraysh [Muḍar], and his people are more entitled to [hold] (authority) and more suitable. I swear by the deity that he shall never see me contesting the leadership authority (*amr*) with them. So fear the deity and do not oppose them or dispute with them."[112] As the architect behind the first Mu'min-Muslim coalition in Makka, Abū Bakr had a foot in both camps. Bashīr accordingly paid him homage, recognizing his claim to authority. Since a group of Anṣār still refused to concede, ʻUmar roughed up their leader, Ibn ʻUbāda. Even after this harsh treatment, Ibn ʻUbāda remained recalcitrant to the end. Nonetheless, others followed Bashīr's lead and recognized the authority (*al-amr*) of Abū Bakr.

The new chief was backed by a young generation of Makka's Qurayshī elite. Among the Makhzūm clan were 'Ikrima b. Abī al-Ḥakam, Khālid b. al-Walīd b. al-Mughīra, and al-Muhājir b. Abī Umayya. Abū Bakr's supporters from the 'Abd Shams clan included Yazīd b. Abī Sufyān, 'Amr b. al-'Āṣ, Khālid b. Sa'īd b. al-'Āṣ, Khālid b. Asīd b. Abī al-'Īṣ, and their client, al-'Alā' b. al-Ḥaḍramī.[113] Abū Sufyān, meanwhile, opposed his impetuous son's choice of joining the rival Makhzūm clan in support of Abū Bakr. Instead, Abū Sufyān proposed to cast his lot with another chief, 'Alī b. Abī Ṭālib. 'Alī, however, declined his support. For good measure, Abū Bakr neutralized this potential threat.[114] He made Fadak public property, thereby rejecting the inheritance claim of Fāṭima, the daughter of Amīn and wife to 'Alī. Abū Bakr had critical need of provisions from Fadak in order to launch an offensive campaign on multiple fronts. As a result, he killed two birds with one stone. When word reached Makka of his rise to power, Abū Bakr's father – Abū Quḥāfa – inquired, "Are the Banū 'Abd Shams and the Banū Mughīra [viz. Banū Makhzūm] pleased with this?" The answer was "Yes."[115] Accordingly, Abū Bakr relentlessly pursued Amīn's expansionist policy, together with the Quraysh.

Default

At the time of his death, Amīn was finalizing his ambitious and costly war plans against al-Yamāma. When Abū Bakr became chief, loyal tribes requested exemption from taxes. Since he urgently needed these revenues to fund his massive expeditions, Abū Bakr firmly said no. "If they withheld only a hobbling-cord of what they gave the prophet, I would fight them for it."[116] Thereafter, he dispatched three thousand men under Usāma, the son of Zayd b. Ḥāritha, to go on a second expedition to Mu'ta. Usāma raided the

village of Ubnā but pulled back before risking a direct engagement with the Banū Kalb and their Quḍāʿa kinsmen.[117] The northern route to Syria therefore remained closed. Meanwhile, Abū Bakr waited and directed affairs in al-Madīna (Yathrib) until Usāma's return. When news of Amīn's death first reached al-Yamāma, Thumāma sent Abū Bakr an urgent letter cautioning him that Aslam was growing stronger by the minute.[118] The Rabīʿa from all quarters of Arabia were joining Aslam's ranks. At this time, Mujjāʿa also approached Abū Bakr. In exchange for his continued loyalty and services against al-Yamāma, the new chief promised him land in al-Khiḍrima.[119]

In August 632 C.E., Abū Bakr marched over 120 miles northeast of al-Madīna to al-Rabadha at al-Abraq. After taking possession of this site from the Banū Thaʿlaba (of Saʿd b. Dhubyān), he secured it as a staging ground and base of operations.[120] From here he dispatched eleven commanders. Nine of these were directed against each and every one of al-Yamāma's trading outposts, including Ḥajr.[121] After appointing (i) Khālid b. al-Walīd as field commander, Abū Bakr ordered him to march on Dūmat al-Jandal. (ii) ʿIkrima b. Abī al-Ḥakam and (iii) Shuraḥbīl b. Ḥasana, accompanied by Mujjāʿa, were sent to reinforce Thumāma in al-Yamāma. (iv) Ḥudahyfa b. Miḥsan and (v) ʿArfaja were assigned detachments to wage war in ʿUmān. Against al-Yaman and Ḥaḍramawt was sent (vi) al-Muhājir b. Abī Umayya. Passing through Makka, he was reinforced by (vii) Khālid b. Asīd. These two commanders fought the Bajīla, thereby forcing their way through the Sarāt mountains. They ultimately advanced against Ṣanʿāʾ and Najrān in the south. To greater al-Baḥrayn, (viii) al-ʿAlāʾ b. al-Ḥaḍramī was dispatched. Lastly, (ix) ʿAmr b. al-ʿĀṣ, (x) Khālid b. Saʿīd b. al-ʿĀṣ, and (xi) Yazīd b. Abī Sufyān were sent to

resume the Syrian campaign. At a later date, Khālid b. Sa'īd was reassigned to the area around Najrān.

En route to Dūmat al-Jandal, Khālid b. al-Walīd attacked the mountain strongholds of the Ṭayy' near Taymā'. Thereafter, he switched his attack pattern.[122] Rather than marching on Dūma as ordered, he headed west. Towards the end of October 632 C.E., he arrived at al-Buzākha accompanied by the recently subdued Ṭayy'. From here he conducted extensive raids throughout the northern plateau. Once central Najd was firmly under his control, he raided the camp of the chief Mālik b. Nuwayra at Buṭāḥ. There he captured Mālik's beautiful wife, Umm Tamīm bt. al-Minhāl. After executing this chief of Banū Yarbū' (of Tamīm), he wed the widow. Meanwhile, 'Ikrima established a 'garrison' in Thumāma's 'territory' where he was lured into a premature war with the enemy. With word from Mujjā'a of 'Ikrima's defeat at the hands of Aslam, Khālid announced, "By god, I will not stop until I have crushed Musaylima [viz. Aslam]."[123] However, not everyone shared the same sentiment. Part of the Anṣār clan under Thābit b. Qays expressed their reservations about waging a patricidal war against Aslam. They insisted on returning to al-Madīna for further instructions. Khālid rejected their request outright and broke camp. Worried that noncooperation might cast doubt on their loyalty to Abū Bakr, they hurried to join Khālid's march against al-Yamāma. In the meantime, 'Ikrima withdrew with his tail between his legs. After regrouping and rebuilding his forces with aid from the Ka'b b. Rabī'a (Hawāzin), he joined al-Muhājir's campaign in the south. Shuraḥbīl b. Ḥasana received his long-awaited orders to redeploy against the Banū Kalb who were protecting Dūmat al-Jandal.[124] From central Arabia,

'Iyāḍ b. Ghanm was dispatched by Abū Bakr with standing orders to stage a frontal assault on the emporium.[125]

Deliverance

After 'Ikrima and Shuraḥbīl b. Ḥasana left western al-Yamāma, tensions ran high in the camp of the Banū Ḥanīfa nomads. Thumāma reassured them that Abū Bakr had neither forsaken nor forgotten them.[126] In anticipation of Khālid's arrival, Thumāma broadcast one last damning poem against Aslam:

> Musaylima [viz. Aslam], turn back! And do not be contentious, for you were not made a partner in the authority (*al-amr*);
>
> You lie to the deity concerning your divine inspiration (*waḥy*); your bizarre fantasy is the bizarre fantasy of an idiotic imbecile;
>
> Your tribe will try to defend you, but if Khālid comes, then you will be discovered;
>
> You have no ascent into the heavens (*al-samā'*), neither do you have any path on the earth (*al-arḍ*).[127]

In response, Aslam issued Khālid b. al-Walīd a moral warning in verse:

> O Ibn al-Walīd, you are in my view [a mere] sinner,
> And an ungrateful infidel (*kāfir*) and a dissenter (*munāfiq*) to the lord (*rabb*).[128]

Shortly after this politically charged poetic exchange, Thumāma and the Banū Suḥaym mobilized. In an effort to outflank al-Yamāma, they planned to join al-'Alā' b. al-Ḥaḍramī in al-Baḥrayn.[129] Before departing, Thumāma raised the spirits of his nomads and subtly warned those who were wavering. He then set off. al-Baḥrayn, however, proved resilient. Only a direct assault on al-Yamāma was possible. On his return journey, Thumāma passed through the territory of the Banū Qays b. Tha'laba (of Bakr b. Wā'il) where members of the Rabī'a had allied themselves with Aslam. As revenge for his part in the death of their tribesman and leader, al-Ḥuṭam b. Ḍubay'a, they pounced

upon him at a spring.[130] Thumāma was dead, but the war was not. Wartime propaganda continued to emanate from al-Madīna. Ḥassān b. Thābit sent a verse warning his former companion, Muḥakkim b. al-Ṭufayl, of the impending doom:

> O Muḥakkim b. Ṭufayl! It has already been destined for you. Success is due to the deity. He willed [for] you 'the serpent of death' [viz. Khālid].[131]

Hard on the heels of this message, Khālid arrived in al-Yamāma.

Clash

It was commerce, and not culture, that brought the conflict to a head. While Khālid marched into the eye of the storm, Abū Bakr's forces fanned out throughout the peninsula, targeting the major trade centers. Back in al-Yamāma, Aslam, Muḥakkim, and other notables (*ashrāf*) identified the anonymous propaganda-poet in their midst. Ibn 'Umayr fled for his life and took refuge with Khālid's advancing forces. He divulged sensitive tactical information to the enemy.[132] In particular, he updated Khālid on conditions in al-Yamāma and Aslam's troop movements. Aslam, he said, was planning to camp in front of his farm estates (*al-amwāl*) in Ubāḍ. Strategically located in the rear, these villages functioned as supply hubs. Aslam, however, had not yet taken up position. Khālid quickly forced his way through the mountain pass, executed its guard detail, and camped opposite Aslam's estates. On the plain of 'Aqrabā', the two armies fought a pitched battle.

War

Aslam fielded an army of seven thousand that included three thousand tribal auxiliaries recruited from the Banū Yashkur, Banū 'Ijl, and Banū Qays b. Tha'laba.[133] Although largely composed of the Rabī'a from the Bakr b. Wā'il, he also included the Banū

Usayyid b. Tamīm (Muḍar) cavalry in his ranks. Whereas Hawdha had once commanded ten thousand, the size and strength of Aslam's forces were greatly diminished by internal dissent. Locked safely in their fortresses, the landed aristocracy lent no assistance. Notwithstanding, Aslam's coalition held together. Muḥakkim and al-Rajjāl took the field. On the other side, Khālid committed his men to an unequal battle. With a force of four thousand drawn from the Banū Ḥanīfa nomads, Banū Quraysh, Asad, and Ṭayy', he charged headlong into the fray.[134] The Banū Saʿd (of Tamīm) – the archenemies of Hawdha – swelled Khālid's ranks. On the eve of battle, Shuraḥbīl b. Aslam warned his father's men against failure: "O [sedentary] Banū Ḥanīfa, today is the day of vigilance; today, if you are defeated, [your] womenfolk will be carried off on horseback as captives, and will be taken as wives without being demanded in marriage. So fight for your noble [viz. Rabīʿa] descent and defend your women."[135] At the sight of Aslam's men brandishing their swords, Khālid urged his men not to lose heart, "O troop of neo-Muslims! The deity has furnished you with comparable means to that of your enemy, so that you are not overwhelmed by them. Do you not see them unsheathe their swords one against one another? I believe they disputed and that strife is amongst them."[136] However, Khālid had jumped to the wrong conclusion. Mujjāʿa objected, saying: "By no means! Rather these are Indian swords (*al-hundūwāniyya*). They fear breaking them, so they brandish them to the sun, in order that their blades become flexible."[137] Thereafter, the two armies advanced to the plain of ʿAqrabā'.

Muḥakkim and al-Rajjāl's forces deflected Khālid's initial attack. Despite suffering heavy casualties, Khālid stubbornly pressed on with the offensive. al-Rajjāl fell. After repelling several more attacks, Aslam declared:

In fact we are steadfast and steadfast!

> The [enemy] tribe (*qawm*) became stubborn like us.
> Our authority (*amr*) is so far still persistent.
> The moral character of our troop does not weaken.[138]

Khālid's men were forced to fall back to their camp where they leveled accusations of cowardice against one another. Meanwhile, Muḥakkim's men staged a raid deep into the enemy camp. They wounded and killed the leader of the Anṣār, Thābit b. Qays. During the fighting, Mujjāʿa valiantly defended Khālid's bride and shouted, "How excellent is the mistress of the tent!"[139] The tables soon turned. Khālid rallied his men. Suddenly, the Banū Usayyid (of Tamīm) cavalry deserted to their Muḍar kinsmen in Khālid's camp. This shift resulted in a complete reversal. The second engagement at ʿAqrabāʾ therefore went to Khālid. Muḥakkim gave the order for immediate retreat to the oasis of al-Raḥmān. En route, an arrow pierced through him. His terror-stricken men hoped to escape a similar fate:

> If I escape from it, I would have escaped mightily,
> Since otherwise I would be drinking from the cup of Muḥakkim.[140]

Khālid's forces charged the oasis. The slaughter was great. Aslam was surrounded. Wounded by Waḥshī's spear, he received the final blow from an Anṣārī.[141] Blood and water flowed in the oasis of death. Fifteen hundred of Aslam's men had fallen by his side. Twenty-five hundred were taken captive. In like manner, twelve hundred of Khālid's men lay among the corpses.[142] Khālid had won a pyrrhic victory.

Conquests

Having suffered heavy casualties, Khālid lacked the manpower necessary to overcome al-Yamāma and its countless fortresses of which only two had fallen. He raided the countryside and captured nineteen villages. Unable to seize the remaining fortresses, he initiated peace talks through the mediation of Mujjāʿa. Salama b. ʿUmayr al-Ḥanafī,

however, refused to capitulate.[143] He urged his fellow Yamāmīs to hold out in their strongholds. After his body was found at the bottom of a well, the negotiations continued uninterrupted. Playing both ends against the middle, Mujjā'a shrewdly negotiated Khālid down from half to one quarter of the neo-Muslim captives, and half of the gold, silver, coats of mail, and herd. The treaty exempted the villages and fortresses captured beforehand. Khālid made peace on these terms and married Mujjā'a's daughter.[144] Seeing that al-Yamāma was not completely subjugated, the Banū Ḥanīfa nomads remained as a garrison force. While still camped in al-Yamāma, Khālid sent 'reinforcements' to greater al-Baḥrayn. In the meantime, the assault on Dūmat al-Jandal in the north failed. Although al-Walīd b. 'Uqba had brought additional men, the enemy had 'Iyāḍ pinned down. Upon his return to al-Madīna, Khālid received orders to march on Dūmat al-Jandal. Arriving on the scene, he lent his assistance to 'Iyāḍ. Their combined forces crashed down on Dūmat al-Jandal from two directions, and overpowered the oasis. The defenders were executed, and their women and children enslaved. The conquest of Dūmat al-Jandal signaled the end of one era and the beginning of another. Abū Bakr was now master of the single most important north Arabian transit zone, well-situated for deploying armies and supplies.[145] After an extended stay, Khālid made his way to al-Ḥīra where the merchants of Dūmat al-Jandal stored their goods. He entered unopposed. By early 634 C.E., the flames of war in eastern and southern Arabia were extinguished.[146] In March 634 C.E., Khālid returned to Dūmat al-Jandal. From there he marched to al-Buṣrā, the gateway to Syria. The herald of the deity (*rasūl allāh*) was dead and the conquest of the Near East had begun. Covered by the blood of Aslam, Abū Bakr assumed the title, 'the successor (caliph) of the herald of the deity' (*khalīfat*

rasūl allāh).[147]   This resulted in the paradox of late proto-Islāmic history: Abū Bakr

fought the 'apostasy' that ultimately became the 'orthodoxy' of classical Islām.

Historiographical Conclusion

<u>Skepticism</u>

The question of historical reconstruction has drawn a great deal of skepticism. In the

"Historiographical Introduction" to *Slaves on Horses: The Evolution of the Islamic*

Polity, P. Crone asserted with respect to the first sesquicentennial of Islāmic

historiography:

> Unsurprisingly, it is full of contradictions, confusions, inconsistencies
> and anomalies, and if these could be ordered a certain meaning might
> emerge. But the debris is dejectingly resistant to internal criticism, and
> because it cannot be ordered, nothing much can be proved or
> disproved…and that there is so much pointless information; but all one
> can do is to note that there are oddities, and in time one gets inured to
> them. It is a tradition in which information means nothing and leads
> nowhere; it just happens to be there and lends itself to little….[148]

Crone denied the possibility of internal criticism given the "disparate" nature of the

"source material"; but, as demonstrated above through the application of the Morellian

method, it is just such heterogeneous material that is ideal for internal criticism as

opposed to a homogenous body of evidence. Moreover, Crone's unchecked skepticism

led to the wholesale rejection of the early Islāmic historical tradition since it exhibited no

stratified "layers" of generation as yielded by the procedure of biblical criticism.[149]

Crone claimed that the transference of this model by Wellhausen, in his "Prolegomena

zur ältesten Geschichte des Islams," and in a modified form by Noth, is 'fallacious.'[150]

As a result, Crone 'abandoned' the Islāmic sources in favor of non-Islāmic sources.[151]

However, for reconstructing the history (and internal development) of early Islām in

Arabia before the conquests (*futūḥ*), these non-Islāmic sources are of limited utility.

Accordingly, Islāmic historical materials prove to be indispensible.   In fact, as

demonstrated above, it is precisely the marginal reports and events preserved in the Islāmic narrative sources that allow for a reconstruction of the history of early Islām.

Narrative Method

Largely in response to the skeptical approach, form-criticism advanced a "critique" and reformulation of Wellhausen's source-criticism.[152] Noth and Conrad observed that the source-critical school (represented by Wellhausen, Caetani, de Goeje et al.) strove to write coherent historical accounts of early Islāmic history.[153] The flaw in the combined method of these historians, according to Noth and Conrad, was that they joined source criticism with "…a presentation of early history."[154] Therefore, the combined method resulted in a negative outcome: the negotiation of analysis and synthesis. That is, the combined method necessitates the resolution of criticism with narrative coherence.[155] Consequently, the works of nineteenth-century source-critics "…still bear the traces of this process."[156] In light of this observation, Noth and Conrad decided not to employ the combined method,[157] and for that reason alone, form-criticism precluded the possibility of writing a descriptive history of early Islām. Nevertheless, despite this problem inherent in the nature of their research project, Noth and Conrad introduced powerful analytic 'tools' with great potential applications, as demonstrated above.

Form-criticism's inability to synthesize a narrative history was not only a serious limitation, but it also clearly established the fact that any criticism (or skepticism) not grounded in historical reconstruction leads to an imbalance resulting in an overemphasis on theoretical considerations. As a methodological corrective against this analytic tendency, R.G. Collingwood cogently argued that history is the product of two stages: analysis and synthesis.[158] In the first stage, the historian sifts through the sources and

"[b]y criticism of the documents, the historian establishes the 'framework' of his narrative, the set of facts out of which a 'story' is to be fashioned in his narrative account of them."[159]   Thereafter, within the "structural" limits imposed by this skeletal frame, the historian applies "constructive" fillers to flesh out the narrative. "[A]s in the structure of an organised body, the purpose of every member can only be deduced from the complete concept of the whole."[160]   As demonstrated in this dissertation, the "twofold" narrative method makes possible the historical reconstruction of early Islām.[161]

Research Prospects

Form-criticism has demonstrated that eighth and ninth-century Islāmic historiographers schematized and systematized the early Islāmic conquest narratives. Accordingly, the primary theme of *futūḥ* is reducible to a number of identifiable topoi.[162]   Islāmic historians plugged these topoi into an "ideal form" that ultimately represented the conquests as "Gesta Dei per Arabos," that is, deeds of God accomplished through the Arabs.[163]   Thus, they narrated how the conquests "should be remembered," but not how they occurred.[164]   Consequently, this casts doubt on the "historicity" of the conquest narratives. In fact, scholarly consensus considers the Battle of Buwayb to be nothing more than a series of topoi strung together to serve later interests.[165]   Comparative research can aid historians in reconstructing these conquests. Detribalization and re-tribalization, for instance, throw into sharp relief the transformative social processes at work in the Islāmic conquests and the subsequent rise of the early Islāmic state.

[1] For the destruction of the idols, see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 552.

[2] For 'inbound' shipments, see Donner, "Mecca's Food Supplies," 256 f.; Watt, s.v. Nakhla.

[3] For "The Affair of the Expedition to al-Qarada," see al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 98 f., esp. 99. For the Makka-Syria and Makka-Najd-'Irāq blockades, also see Hamidullah, *Battlefields*, 37 and Errata. For the location of Dhāt al-'Irq, see A.J. Wensinck and J. Jomier, s.v. Iḥrām, *EI²*; and G. Rentz, al-'Aqīq, *EI²*.

[4] For example, "…the direct gains of the northern traffic…was reputed to bring them [viz. the Banū Quraysh] hundred percent profits" (Hamidullah, *Battlefields*, 37).

[5] For the Aḥābīsh, see ibid., 24.

[6] For the "house of the Banū Jaḥsh," see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 214 f.

[7] Q. 5:3, translation adapted from *Koran*. For *makhmaṣa*, see David Waines, s.v. Famine, *EQ*. For the main 'recipients' of charity, see Michael Bonner, s.v. Poverty and the Poor, *EQ*.

[8] Q. 62:4, translation adapted from *Koran*. Also see Q. 24:22.

[9] Q. 3:180, translation adapted from ibid.

[10] Q. 8:41, translation adapted from ibid. For war booty, see F. Løkkegaard, s.v. *ghanīma*, *EI²*.

[11] *Koran* (Q. 4:8).

[12] Q. 98:5, translation adapted from ibid. For "*Tazakkā*, &c.," see Watt, *M/Mecca*, 165-169.

[13] For the *fuqarā'* as the 'inner' poor, see Bonner, s.v. Poverty and the Poor.

[14] For conflicting reports on Abū Sufyān's move to Yathrib, see Bernjian, s.v. Abū Sufyān.

[15] "On the period spent by the Messenger of God (ṢAAS) in Mecca" see Ibn Kathīr, *Life*, vol. 3, 428 f. and 431. For the new governor of Makka, see Watt, s.v. Makka; Ed., s.v. 'Attāb, *EI²*; Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 568 and 597; and cf. "Ibn Hishām's Notes," 774, Note 806.

[16] For the "war of Ḥāṭib," see Watt, s.v. al-Madīna.

[17] For "Khālid's Journey to Destroy al-'Uzzā," see Watt, s.v. Nakhla; and Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 565 f. For Ḥunayn, see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 568; Watt, s.v. Makka; M. Lecker, s.v. Sulaym, *EI²*; H. Lammens and 'Abd al-Hafez Kamal, s.v. Ḥunayn, *EI²*; H. Kindermann, s.v. Asad, *EI²*; and W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. Fazāra, *EI²*.

[18] For Shaymā' and the factions within the Banū Sa'd b. Bakr, see W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. Sa'd b. Bakr, *EI²*.

[19] For 'Āmir b. Ṣa'ṣa'a's political realignment, see W. Caskel, s.v. 'Āmir b. Ṣa'ṣa'a, *EI²*.

[20] For al-Ṭā'if, see M. Lecker, s.v. al-Ṭā'if, *EI²*; and Hamidullah, *Battlefields*, 46.

[21] "One wonders whether the same factors do not in part lie behind the zeal with which the nomadic tribes of northern and central Arabia joined Muḥammad's new state, once he had conquered Mecca and al-Ṭā'if – a zeal displayed in the famous 'Year of Delegations.' For these tribes were, like nomads everywhere, dependent on their settled neighbors for certain essentials of their diet; hence, once Muḥammad had firm control over all agricultural areas in northwestern Arabia, the options of the tribes were distinctly limited. If they wished to eat, they had to come to terms with this new, ubiquitous political force" (Donner, "Mecca's Food Supplies," 265 f.). For the capitulation of the tribes, see for example, Ibn Kathīr, *Life*, vol. 3, 437. For the 'Year of Delegations,' see M. Lecker, s.v. Wufūd, *EI²*.

[22] For the annual market cycle, cf. Bonner, "Time," 9, 23, 26, and 28. For 'Syrian Nakhla' as a pilgrimage site, see Watt, s.v. Nakhla.

[23] For the "Sequence and Timing of Markets (ca. 600-610 C.E.)," see Bonner, "Time," 28.

[24] For "The District of al-Falaj," see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 24. Map 4.1 based on Bonner, "Time," 35 and 50, al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 55, and Crone, *Meccan Trade*, 4.

[25] For the *mawāsim*, see Bonner, "Time," 35.

[26] *Koran* (Q. 22:27).

[27] For the "*mawāsim* sequence," see Bonner, "Time," 36.

[28] Q. 2:198, translation adapted from *Koran*; variant cited in Bonner, "Time," 40.

[29] For the 'offices' and institutions, see Bonner, "Time," 39 and 41.

[30] Q. 5:97, translation adapted from *Koran*. For "feeding the poor," see Bonner, s.v. Poverty and the Poor (Q. 22:28, 5:89, 5:95, 58:4).

[31] For outlawing the practice of intercalation, see Bonner, "Time," 29 and 39. For "The Story of the Intercalators," see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 21 f.

[32] Cf. Q. 9:36-37. "…[T]he *mawāsim* cycle (in all its versions) is fundamentally incompatible with the 'markets of the Arabs' described in the *ḥadīth al-aswāq*" (Bonner, "Time," 36).

[33] For Muḥammad's northern ambitions, see for example, Watt, *M/Prophet*, 203.

[34] For "The Raid of Mu'ta," see F. Buhl, s.v. Mu'ta, *EI²*; al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 372-378; and Moshe Gil, *A History of Palestine, 634-1099* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1997), 22, fn. 17. For Ja'far b. Abī Ṭālib, see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 526 and 540. For Khālid b. al-Walīd, see P. Crone, s.v. Khālid b. al-Walīd, *EI²*; and "Ibn Hishām's Notes," 772, Note 790.

[35] Translation adapted from al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 376 f.

[36] For "The Raid of Dhāt al-Salāsil," see ibid., 378 f.; Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 668 f.; M.J. Kister, s.v. Quḍā'a, *EI²*; Gil, 25; and A.J. Wensinck, 'Amr b. b. al-'Āṣ, *EI²*.

[37] For "The Raid on Tabūk, A.H. 9," see M.A. al-Bakhit, s.v. Tabūk, *EI²*; Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 602-614; and cf. Q. 9:54-59.

[38] For 'Abd Allāh b. Ubayy, see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 604; Lecker, "King Ibn Ubayy," 56; and Watt, s.v. 'Abd Allāh b. Ubayy.

[39] For Muḥammad's warnings, see for example, Watt, *M/Medina*, 190 (Q. 9:73). For equipping 'the poor,' see Bonner, s.v. Poverty and the Poor.

[40] For the capitulation of the 'local chiefs,' see al-Bakhit, s.v. Tabūk. For "The Third Moslem Expedition against Dūma (630 – 631 A.D.)," see Musil, *Arabia Deserta*, 539-542 and 546 f.; and cf. Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 607 f. For "The Treaties with Dūmat al-Jandal," cf. Watt, *M/Medina*, 362-365.

[41] For Abū 'Āmir, cf. Watt, *M/Medina*, 190; and al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 513 f. For the withholding of monetary support for Tabūk, cf. Q. 75-76.

[42] Q. 9:107, translation adapted from Gilliot, s.v. Mosque of the Dissension.

[43] Q. 9:108, translation adapted from *Koran*.

[44] Q. 9:108, translation adapted from ibid.

[45] For Abū 'Āmir as 'the sinner,' see Gilliot, s.v. Mosque of the Dissension.

[46] Q. 9:109, translation adapted from *Koran*. For "The Opposition Mosque," see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 609.

[47] For Sa'd b. 'Ubāda, see W. Montgomery Watt, Sa'd b. 'Ubāda, *EI²*; Watt, s.v. al-Anṣār; and Wilferd Madelung, *The Succession to Muḥammad: A Study of the Early Caliphate* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1997), 35.

[48] For the northwestern oasis, cf. I. Shadid, s.v. Nadjrān, *EI²*.

[49] For the "treaty of peace," see Watt, *M/Medina*, 127 f.

[50] For "Talāba and Jurash," see al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 371; al-Balādhurī, *The Origins of the Islamic State*, vol. 1, trans. Philip K. Hitti (Beirut: Khayats, 1966), 91, fn. 1; M. Lecker and C.E. Bosworth, s.v. Wufūd, *EI²*; and Watt, *M/Medina*, 120 f. For Shanū'a, see G. Strenziok, s.v. Azd, *EI²*. For Abū Sufyān's appointment, see al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 59; Watt, *M/Medina*, 123 and cf. 367; cf. Watt, s.v. Abū Sufyān; and Bernjian, s.v. Abū Sufyān.

[51] For Hawdha's death date, see Kister, "Struggle," 15 f.; Watt, *M/Medina*, 133; and cf. Simon, 85. For Musaylima's succession, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 66 ff. and 73, esp. 67, and 94 f. For the severance and transfer of Musaylima's title "Lord of al-Yamāma" to Ṭulayḥa as "Lord of Khaybar," see Landau-Tasseron, s.v. Ṭulayḥa; and al-Ṭabarī, *Ta'rīkh*, vol. 4, 1796.

[52] For the opposition, see Makin, *Representing*, 135-140; al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 20, 37, 44, 50, 95, and cf. 94. For the Banū Suḥaym b. Murra, see Ibn al-Kalbī, vol. 1, 156; and al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 139 and fn. 888.

[53] For Musaylima's supporters, see for example, Ibn Kathīr, *Life*, vol. 4, 69.

[54] For "The District of Qarqarī" and "The District of al-Karma," see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 22 f. and 44.

[55] For the Banū Qushayr, see G. Levi Della Vida, s.v. Qushayr, *EI²*; al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 16 and 38; and Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 54.

[56] For Thumāma "…as a representative (*'āmil*) of the Prophet in al-Yamāma," see Makin, *Representing*, 132.

[57] Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 54 f.

[58] Cited in Makin, *Representing*, 102. "There seems, however, to be another way of viewing these seemingly contradictory reports…these reports give a meaningful story – if they were viewed as *complementary* rather than contradictory" (Shoufani, 143 f., emphasis added).

[59] "This kind of attire ["veiled, clad in clothes which concealed him" (Kister, "Struggle," 17)] indicates the respect in which Musaylima was held: spiritual leaders of a tribe (*kāhin-s*), soothsayers and 'holy persons' were clothed in this fashion" (Ibid.). "[I]t may be assumed, then, that Musaylima was not one of the 'deputation'" (Watt, *M/Medina*, 134). For "two versions of the actual meeting between the deputation and Muḥammad," see Makin, *Representing*, 94; and Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 636 f.

[60] For the members of the deputation, see Watt, *M/Medina*, 133 f.; Makin, *Representing*, 93 and 136; and cf. Kister, "Struggle," 20.

[61] For Ramla, cf. Watt, *M/Medina*, 396; Makin, *Representing*, 94 f., 114, and 241; al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 94; Ibn Kathīr, *Life*, vol. 4, 67 f. and 70; Kister, "Struggle," 16; al-Ṭabarī, *Biographies*, 177-180; Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 527, and cf. 146; and "Ibn Hishām's Notes," 793, Note 918.

[62] For Musaylima 'the imposter,' see Ibn Kathīr, *Life*, vol. 4, 70, and cf. 67 and 69; and cf. Kister, "Struggle," 17.

[63] Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 51. For the reinterpretation of the 'two gold bracelets' dream, see for example, Kister, "Struggle," 16; and Muslim, 934.

[64] Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 51. For the 'date palm branch' episode, see Kister, "Struggle," 18; and Muslim, 934. For Thābit b. Qays, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 98; and Makin, *Representing*, 235, 238 and 241.

[65] Translation adapted from Kister, "Struggle," 20. Also cited in Ibn Kathīr, *Life*, vol. 4, 68; and al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 117 f. For Abū Hurayra, see Robson, s.v. Abū Hurayra; and Juynboll, s.v. Abū Hurayra. For Furāt b. Ḥayyān's capture, see al-Ṭabarī, *Foundation*, 99. For Furāt b. Ḥayyān's land grant, see al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 93.

[66] al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 93. For Mujjāʿa b. Murāra's land grant, also see ibid., 87; and Makin, *Representing*, 137.

[67] For Salmā b. Ḥanẓala, see Makin, *Representing*, 136.

[68] For the gift, see Kister, "Struggle," 17; and cf. Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 631.

[69] Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 52.

[70] For the reign of Khusraw II, see Bosworth, s.v. Parwīz, Khusraw (II).

[71] For the Banū Usayyid, see Kister, s.v. Musaylima; and Kister, "Struggle," 21.

[72] For the *qurā al-aḥālīf* and the *ḥaram*, see Kister, "Struggle," 21; al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 108; and cf. al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 90 f.; and Eickelman, 42 ff.

[73] al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 108; variant cited in Kister, "Struggle," 22.

[74] "So they [viz. the sedentary Yamāmīs] replied, 'Is it not forbidden to desecrate the holy enclave and to ruin property?'" (al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 108-109).

[75] Ibid., 109. Also cited in Kister, "Struggle," 22.

[76] Kister, "Struggle," 22. Also see al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 109.

[77] al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 109. Also cited in Kister, "Struggle," 22.

[78] Translation adapted from Kister, "Struggle," 22; al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 109; and al-Ṭabarī, *Ta'rīkh*, vol. 4, 1933. For *itāwa*, see Cl. Cahen, s.v. Itāwa, *EI²*.

[79] For "Subdivisions of [the Tamīm] Tribe," see Watt, *M/Medina*, 139; M. Lecker, s.v. Tamīm b. Murr, *EI²*; al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 84-87 and 89; and Wellhausen, "Prolegomena," 13. For "The Coming of the Deputation of Banū Tamīm," see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 628-631; and Ella Landau-Tasseron, "Processes of Redaction: The Case of the Tamīmite Delegation to the Prophet Muḥammad," *BSOAS* 49:2 (1986): 253-270. For the Ribāb confederacy, see W. Caskel, s.v. Ḍabba, *EI²*.

[80] "Reinforcements from Banū Tamīm used to come to Thumāma b. Uthāl…" (al-Ṭabarī, Conquest, 87). For Mālik b. Nuwayra, cf. Ella Landau-Tasseron, s.v. Mālik b. Nuwayra, *EI²*.

[81] Q. 5:3, translation adapted from *Koran*. For the chronology of this *sūra*, cf. Bell, 111; and Devin J. Stewart, s.v. Farewell Pilgrimage, *EQ*.

[82] "No radical distinction will be drawn between a 'renewer of religion' who preaches an older revelation, actual or supposititious, and a 'founder of religion' who claims to bring completely new deliverances. The two types merge into one another" (Weber, *Sociology*, 46).

[83] Q. 9:3-14, translation adapted from *Koran*. For the "new policy of noncooperation," see Donner, *Muhammad*, 50; and Madelung, *Succession*, 47.

[84] See Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 53.

[85] Q. 40:2-3, translation adapted from *Koran*. Also cited in Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 53.

[86] Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 53.

[87] Cited in ibid., 53 f. Also cf. Makin, *Representing*, 250.

[88] Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 54.

[89] Translation adapted from Makin, *Representing*, 202; and al-Wāqidī, *Ridda* (1990), 108; variant cited in Makin, *Representing*, 203.

[90] For "The War of al-Yamāma," see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 110. "Muḥakkim b. Ṭufayl has destroyed the tribe (*al-qawm*), and has destroyed some men whom we do not consider to be men" (Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 52 f.).

[91] For Ibn 'Umayr al-Yashkurī, cf. Makin, *Representing*, 139, fn. 88, and 245 f.

[92] Cited in Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 52 f.

[93] "…[T]he agricultural activities of the 'village people' of Banū Ḥanīfa of al-Yamāma were probably done by women and this peculiar division of labour also indicates the nomadic attitude" (Simon, 174 f., fn. 43). For the search for Ibn 'Umayr al-Yashkurī, see Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 53.

[94] For "Other Opponents," see Makin, *Representing*, 138-140.

[95] Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 54. For the Banū Qushayr, see G. Levi Della Vida, s.v. Qushayr, *EI²*; and al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 16 and 38, and cf. 96. "…[H]e [viz. Musaylima] feared that…Thumāma would get the better of him in Ḥajr" (al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 93). For the Banū Suḥaym, see al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 139.

[96] For Mujjāʿa's coup, cf. al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 105, fn. 75. For Ṣabira b. Hawdha's genealogy, see Ibn al-Kalbī, vol. 1, 156.

[97] For Duran and Sihām, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 110. For the retreat of the Banū Tamīm, cf. al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 87; and al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 111.

[98] Opening protocol reconstructed from al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 87. For "Musaylima's Letter and the Apostle's Answer Thereto," see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 649; al-Ṭabarī, *Last Years*, 106; and Ibn Kathīr, *Life*, vol. 4, 69. Also see Makin, *Representing*, 26-36 and 55-91.

[99] For the episode with the two messengers, see Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 55; and Ibn Kathīr, *Life*, vol. 4, 69.

[100] Q. 7:128.

[101] Cited in al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 87. Also see al-Ṭabarī, *Last Years*, 107; and Ibn Kathīr, *Life*, vol. 4, 69.

[102] For the highborn Yamāmī woman, see Makin, *Representing*, 141, fn. 100; and cf. *Nahjul Balagha: Sermons, Letters and Sayings of Hazrat Ali*, trans. Syed Mohammed Askari Jafery, 2ⁿᵈ ed. (Elmhurst, New York: Tahrike Tarsile Qur'an, 1981), 13.

[103] For the *diya*, see Makin, *Representing*, 137 f. For Ḥajr, see al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 93.

[104] For the 'expeditions' to al-Yaman, see al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 528 ff.; Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 678; "Ibn Hishām's Notes," 792, Note 916; and cf. Watt, *M/Medina*, 124, fn. 2, and 367.

[105] For the 'alms-tax,' see Madelung, *Succession*, 47.

[106] For Rabīʿa and Muḍar, see Ibn al-Kalbī, vol. 1, 1; and H. Kindermann, s.v. Rabīʿa and Muḍar, *EI²*. "The religion of Muḥammad…and Musaylima turned bellicose through their tight association with Arabian folklore" (Wellhausen, "Prolegomena," 19). For the rivalry between Rabīʿa and Muḍar, see for example, Kister, "Struggle," 3; and cf. Makin, *Representing*, 126 f.

[107] al-Ṭabarī, *Ta'rīkh*, vol. 4, 1937; Eickelman, 48; Wellhausen, "Prolegomena," 16; and cf. al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 112.

[108] For "The Transformation of Charisma in an Anti-authoritarian Direction," cf. Weber, *Theory*, 386-392.

[109] For Muḥammad's death date, see F. Buhl and A.T. Welch, s.v. Muḥammad, *EI²*.

[110] Translation adapted from Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 686; Ibn Isḥāq, *Das Leben*, vol. 1, part 2, 1016. "The expression *hādhā al-amr*, this matter, was often used in early texts in the meaning of the reign or the caliphate" (Madelung, *Succession*, 34, fn. 18).

[111] Translation adapted from al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 3, and cf. 1-8, esp. 6; and al-Ṭabarī, *Ta'rīkh*, vol. 4, 1839, and cf. 1841. For "The Meeting in the Hall of the Banū Sāʿida," also see Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 683-687. For the "two candidates," see Madelung, *Succession*, 31, 39, and 45.

[112] Translation adapted from al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 7 f. For Bashīr b. Saʿd, see W. 'Arafat, s.v. Bashīr b. Saʿd, *EI²*; and Madelung, *Succession*, 33. For *khalīfat rasūl allāh*, see Madelung, *Succession*, 46; and cf. al-Balādhurī, s.v. Abū Bakr, 163 f.

[113] For "…the back-bone of Abū Bakr's group of supporters," see Shoufani, 61 f.; and Madelung, *Succession*, 45.

[114] For Abū Sufyān's proposal, see Madelung, *Succession*, 40 f. For Abū Sufyān's impetuous son, see for example, Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 189. For the Fadak episode, see L. Veccia Vaglieri, s.v. Fadak, *EI²*; and al-Balādhurī, s.v. Abū Bakr, 174.

[115] Cited in al-Balādhurī, s.v. Abū Bakr, 164. For Abū Bakr's "tribal support," cf. Shoufani, 66.

[116] Cited in Madelung, *Succession*, 48.

[117] For "The Raid of Usāma b. Zayd to Mu'ta," see al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 546-550; M. Hinds, s.v. *maghāzī*, *EI²*; cf. Ibn Isḥāq, *Life*, 652; Musil, *Arabia Deserta*, 547; and Wellhausen, "Prolegomena," 9 f., and cf. 8 f.

[118] For Thumāma's letter, see Makin, *Representing*, 132. For the Rabī'a in Musaylima's ranks, see Makin, *Representing*, 240.

[119] For Mujjā'a b. Murāra's land grant, see al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 93.

[120] For al-Rabadha as the staging ground, see al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 51 f.; S.'A.'A. al-Rashid, s.v. al-Rabadha, *EI²*; and cf. Wellhausen, "Prolegomena," 10. For the location of al-Rabadha, see M. Lecker, s.v. al-Ridda, *EI²*. For the remote (and unlikely) staging ground of Dhū al-Qaṣṣa, see Fred M. Donner, *Map I. Western Arabia at the Time of the Riddah* [map], [no scale], in al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, xxiv; and Fred M. Donner, *Map 2. Eastern Arabia at the Time of the Riddah* [map], [no scale], in al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, xxv.

[121] For the eleven commanders, see Wellhausen, "Prolegomena," 8 f.; Shoufani, 120, 126 f., 133 f., and 138; and Watt, *M/Medina*, 366 ff. For 'Ikrima b. Abī Jahl, see Kister, "Struggle," 25 and 29; and al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 139. For Shuraḥbīl b. Ḥasana, see Makin, *Representing*, 240; and al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 93 and 139. For the location of the Bajīla, see W. Montgomery Watt, s.v. Badjīla, *EI²*. For Khālid b. Sa'īd b. al-'Āṣ, see Madelung, *Succession*, 45.

[122] For the location of the Ṭayy', see Musil, *Arabia Deserta*, 534. For the submission of the Ṭayy', see Shoufani, 125, and cf. Wellhausen, "Prolegomena," 9. For the date of al-Buzākha, see Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 557 f. For Buṭāḥ, see Shoufani, 120 f.

[123] Cited in al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 89. For 'Ikrima b. Abī Jahl's "garrison," see Kister, "Struggle," 25. For 'Ikrima b. Abī Jahl's defeat and reassignment, see Shoufani, 126 ff. and 135 f. For the Anṣār's reservations, see Shoufani, 130.

[124] For Shuraḥbīl b. Ḥasana, see al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 139; cf. Shoufani, 127 f.; Makin, *Representing*, 241; and Kister, "Struggle," 29.

[125] For Dūmat al-Jandal, see al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 139, fn. 889; and Musil, *Arabia Deserta*, 547 and 549.

[126] For Thumāma's support of Abū Bakr, see for example, Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 54.

[127] Cited in ibid.

[128] Translation adapted from Makin, *Representing*, 217.

[129] For Thumāma b. Uthāl in al-Baḥrayn, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 111; and al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 139. For Khālid b. al-Walīd as "the sword of God," see Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 54.

[130] For the Rabī'a allied with Musaylima, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 112. For the death of Thumāma b. Uthāl, see al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 137-150, esp. 149 f.

[131] Cited in Ibn Ḥubaysh, *Ghazawāt* (1992), vol. 1, 58.

[132] For the defection of Ibn 'Umayr al-Yashkurī, see ibid., 53. For the quisling topos, cf. Noth and Conrad, 167 f. For 'Aqrabā', see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 45 and 113 f. For Ubāḍ, see al-Hamdānī, 162.

[133] For Musaylima's tribal auxiliaries, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 112 f., and cf. 113; Donner, "The Bakr b. Wā'il Tribes," 16; and Caskel, s.v. Bakr b. Wā'il. For the landed aristocracy, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 117; and cf. al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 127. For the number in Musaylima's army, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 112; and Makin, *Representing*, 240-243. For "topoi based on 'forty'," see Conrad, "Abraha and Muḥammad," 230 ff. For Sayf b. 'Umar al-Tamīmī *al-Usayyidī*, see Wellhausen, "Prolegomena," 3-7.

[134] For Khālid b. al-Walīd's tribal coalition, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 112. For the Banū Sa'd (of Tamīm), see Margoliouth, "On the Origin," 491. For the number in Khālid b. al-Walīd's army, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 112. For "topoi based on 'forty'," see Conrad, "Abraha and Muḥammad," 230 ff.

[135] Translation adapted from al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 115.

[136] Translation adapted from al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 88.

[137] Ibid.

[138] Translation adapted from Makin, *Representing*, 217. For the death of al-Rajjāl b. 'Unfuwa, see Makin, *Representing*, 242; and al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 88.

[139] Cited in al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 120. For "Various Early Accounts of the March to al-Yamāma," see Makin, *Representing*, 235, 238, 241 f., and 246. For Mujjā'a b. Murāra, cf. al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 113 and 115.

[140] Cited in al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 89 f. For the military engagements, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 115; and Makin, *Representing*, 241 and 246.

[141] For the death of Musaylima and his slayer(s), see al-Wāqidī, *Life*, 425, and cf. 131 and 139 f.; Makin, *Representing*, 239 f. and 245; and al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 88 f. For the number of 'casualties' on Musaylima's side, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 116.

[142] For the number of 'casualties' on Khālid b. al-Walīd's side, see Makin, *Representing*, 236, 239, and 242 f.; al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 128; and al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 90-93. For the number of 'captives,' see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 120.

[143] For the villages, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 120 f., and cf. 26. For the negotiations, see al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 118 f. and 120 f.; and al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 130 ff.

[144] For the terms of the peace treaty, see al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ*, 90; and cf. al-Askar, *al-Yamama*, 119 f. For the 'women clad as warriors' topos, see Noth and Conrad, 170 f.; and al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 129 f. For Khālid b. al-Walīd's marriage to Mujjā'a b. Murāra's daughter, see Makin, *Representing*, 237, 243 f., 247, and cf. 240 and 243; Shoufani, 130; and al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 133.

[145] For Khālid b. al-Walīd's camp in al-Yamāma after 'Aqrabā', see al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 133 f. For Khālid b. al-Walīd's 'reinforcements' to greater al-Baḥrayn, see Shoufani, 134; and cf. Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 558 f. For the "storehouses in al-Ḥīra," see Musil, *Arabia Deserta*, 543. For the joint campaign of 'Iyāḍ b. Ghanm and Khālid b. al-Walīd, see ibid., 547 f. and 550 ff.

[146] For the end of the so-called *ridda* wars, see Shoufani, 131; and Caetani, *Annali*, vol. 2, part 1, 558. For Khālid b. al-Walīd's 'departure' date and itinerary to Syria, see Musil, *Arabia Deserta*, 548 and 567 f.

[147] For *khalīfat rasūl allāh*, see al-Ṭabarī, *Conquest*, 7, and cf. 150, fn. 950; Madelung, *Succession*, 46; and cf. al-Balādhurī, s.v. Abū Bakr, 163 f.

[148] Crone, *Slaves on Horses*, 12.

[149] Ibid., 13 f.

[150] Ibid.

[151] Cf. ibid., 3; and Noth and Conrad, xi.

[152] Noth and Conrad, 3.

[153] Ibid.

[154] Ibid.

[155] Ibid.

[156] Ibid.

[157] Ibid., 4.

[158] See White, 59 ff.

[159] Ibid., 59 f.

[160] Immanuel Kant, *Prolegomena to Any Future Metaphysics That Will Be Able to Present Itself as a Science*, ed. P. Gray-Lucas (Manchester, England: Manchester University Press, 1978), 12 f.

[161] Cf. White, 59 ff.

[162] For the six-node narrative cycle of the ideal conquest campaign, see Noth and Conrad, 217 f.

[163] Ibid; Wellhausen, "Prolegomena," 4, fn. 2.

[164] For a similar observation, see P. Heath, s.v. 'Antar, Sīrat, *EI³*.

[165] Noth and Conrad, 97, 137, and 194. "Indeed, Donner has shown how considerations of this kind led to the *ex nihilo* invention of a whole battle, that of Buwayb, by tradents from the tribe of Shaybān, who were obliged to fashion for themselves a great victory as a counter to accounts of their defeat by the Persians at the Battle of the Bridge" (Ibid., 137). "This cycle [viz. the Battle of Buwayb] was elaborated in the manner of the *ayyām al-'arab* tales by piecing together numerous accounts of small skirmishes to create a synthesized 'major battle' (Fred M. Donner, *The Early Islamic Conquests* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1981), 199).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Primary Sources

Abū Yūsuf. *Taxation in Islām: Abū Yūsuf's Kitāb al-Kharāj*. Vol. 3. Translated by A. Ben Shemesh. Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1969.

al-Balādhurī. *Ansāb al-Ashrāf*. Vol. 8. Edited by Maḥmūd Firdaws ʿAẓm. Damascus: Dār al-Yaqẓa al-ʿArabiyya, 1997.

—. *Kitāb Futūḥ al-Buldān*. Edited by M.J. de Goeje. 2nd ed. Leiden: Brill, 1968.

—. *The Origins of the Islamic State*. Vol. 1. Translated by Philip K. Hitti. Beirut: Khayats, 1966.

al-Balansī. *Ta'rīkh al-Ridda, Gleaned from al-Iktifā'*. Edited by Khurshīd Ahmad Fāriq. New Delhi: Indian Institute of Islamic Studies, 1968.

The Dabistán or School of Manners. Vol. 3. Translated by David Shea and Anthony Troyer. Paris: Oriental Translation Fund of Great Britain and Ireland, 1843.

al-Hamdānī. *Geographie der arabischen Halbinsel*. Edited by David Heinrich Müller. Amsterdam: Oriental Press, 1968.

Ibn Ḥawqal. *Kitāb Ṣūrat al-Arḍ*. Edited by J.H. Kramers. Vol. 2. 3rd ed. Bibliotheca Geographorum Arabicorum. Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1967.

Ibn Ḥubaysh. *Ghazawāt Ibn Ḥubaysh: Kitāb al-Ghazawāt*. Vol. 1. Edited by Suhayl Zakkār. Beirut: Dār al-Fikr, 1992.

—. *Kitāb al-Ghazawāt*. 4 Volumes. Edited by Aḥmad Ghunaym. Cairo: n.p., 1983.

Ibn Isḥāq. *Das Leben Muhammed's nach Muhammed Ibn Ishâk*. Vol. 1. Parts 1 and 2. Edited by Ferdinand Wüstenfeld. Göttingen: Dieterichsche Universitäts–Buchhandlung, 1858.

—. *The Life of Muḥammad: A Translation of Ibn Isḥāq's Sīrat Rasūl Allāh*. Translated by A. Guillaume. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1955.

Ibn al-Kalbī. *Ğamharat an-nasab: Das genealogische Werk des Hišām Ibn Muḥammad al-Kalbī*. 2 vols. Edited by Werner Caskel. Leiden: Brill, 1966.

Ibn Kathīr. *The Life of the Prophet Muḥammad: A Translation of al-Sīra al-Nabawiyya*. Vols. 2, 3 and 4. Translated by Trevor Le Gassick. Reading, U.K.: Garnet Publishing Ltd., 1998.

Ibn al-Nadīm. *The Fihrist of al-Nadīm: A Tenth-Century Survey of Muslim Culture*. 2 vols. Edited and translated by Bayard Dodge. New York: Columbia University Press, 1970.

Ibn Saʿd. *Kitāb al-Ṭabaqāt al-Kabīr* (*Biographien Muhammeds*). Vol. 3. Part 1. Edited by Eduard Sachau. Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1904.

Ibn ʿUmar al-Tamīmī, Sayf. *Kitāb al-Ridda wa al-Futūḥ wa Kitāb al-Jamal wa Masīr ʿĀʾisha wa ʿAlī*. 2 vols. Edited by Qāsim al-Sāmarrāʾī. Leiden: Smitskamp Oriental Antiquarium, 1995.

Koran. Translated by N.J. Dawood. London: Penguin, 2006.

Muslim. *Saḥīḥ Muslim*. al-Riyāḍ: Bayt al-Afkār al-Dawliyya, 1998.

al-Nafzāwī. *The Perfumed Garden of Sensual Delight*. Translated by Jim Colville. London: Kegan Paul International, 1999.

Nahjul Balagha: Sermons, Letters and Sayings of Hazrat Ali. Translated by Syed Mohammed Askari Jafery. 2nd ed. Elmhurst, New York: Tahrike Tarsile Qurʾan, 1981.

al-Ṭabarī. *The Ancient Kingdoms*. Vol. 4. Translated by Moshe Perlmann. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1987.

—. *Biographies of the Prophet's Companions and Their Successors*. Vol. 39. Translated by Ella Landau-Tasseron. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1998.

—. *The Conquest of Arabia*. Vol. 10. Translated by Fred M. Donner. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1993.

—. *The Foundation of the Community*. Vol. 7. Translated by W. Montgomery Watt and M.V. McDonald. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1987.

—. *The Last Years of the Prophet*. Vol. 9. Translated by I.K. Poonawala. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1985.

—. *The Sāsānids, the Byzantines, the Lakmids, and Yemen*. Vol. 5. Translated by C.E. Bosworth. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1999.

—. *Ta'rīkh al-Rusul wa al-Mulūk*. 15 Volumes. Edited by Michael Jan de Goeje et al. Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1879-1901.

al-Wāqidī. *Kitāb al-Maghāzī*. Vols. 1 and 2. Edited by Marsden Jones. London: Oxford University Press, 1966.

—. *Kitāb al-Ridda*. Edited by Muhammad Hamidullah. Paris: Tougui, 1989.

—. *Kitāb al-Ridda*. Edited by Yaḥyā al-Jubūrī. Beirut: Dār al-Gharb al-Islāmī, 1990.

—. *Kitāb al-Ridda*. Edited by Maḥmūd 'A. Abū-'l-Hayr. 'Ammān: Dār al-Furqān, 1991.

—. *The Life of Muḥammad: al-Wāqidī's Kitāb al-Maghāzī*. Translated by Rizwi Faizer et al. New York: Routledge, 2011.

Wathīma b. Mūsā b. al-Furāt. *Watīma's Kitāb-ar-Ridda aus Ibn Ḥağar's Isāba; ein Beitrag zur Geschichte des Abfalls der Araberstämme nach Muhammads Tod*. Edited and translated by Wilhelm Hoenerbach. Wiesbaden: F. Steiner, 1951.

Secondary Sources

Allen, Roger. *An Introduction to Arabic Literature*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2000.

Almeida, Joseph A. *Justice as an Aspect of the Polis Idea in Solon's Political Poems: A Reading of the Fragments in Light of the Researches of New Classical Archaeology*. Leiden: Brill, 2003.

Antoun, Richard T. *Muslim Preacher in the Modern World: A Jordanian Case Study in Comparative Perspective*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1989.

Arabic and Islamic Studies in Honor of H.A.R. Gibb. Edited by G. Makdisi. Leiden: Brill, 1965.

al-Askar, Abdullah. "Regional Politics, A Case-Study: al-Yamama in the 6th and 7th Centuries." Ph.D. diss., University of California, Los Angeles (UCLA), 1985.

—. *al-Yamama in the Early Islamic Era*. Reading, U.K.: Ithaca Press, 2002.

Assmann, Jan. *Moses the Egyptian: The Memory of Egypt in Western Monotheism*. Cambridge, Massachusetts: Harvard University Press, 1997.

Bates, Daniel G. "The Role of the State in Peasant-Nomad Mutualism." *AQ* 44:3 (Jul., 1971): 109-131.

Bell, Richard and W. Montgomery Watt. *Introduction to the Qur'ān*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 2005.

The Biography of Muhammad: The Issue of the Sources. Edited by Harald Motzki. Leiden: Brill, 2000.

Bloch, Marc. *The Historian's Craft*. Translated by Peter Putnam. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1953.

Bonebakker, S.A. and Michael Fishbein. *A Reader of Classical Arabic Literature*. Venice, Italy: Università Ca'Foscari, 1995.

Caetani, Leone. *Annali dell'Islām*. Volume 2. Part 1: 11 A.H. Milan: Ulrico Hoepli, 1907.

—. *Chronographia Islamica ossia Riassunto cronologico della storia di tutti i popoli musulmani dall'anno 1 all'anno 922 della Higrah (622-1517 dell'Èra Volgare)*. Parts 4 and 5. Paris: Librairie Paul Geuthner, 1912.

—. *Studi di storia orientale*. Volume 3. Milan: Ulrico Hoepli, 1914.

The Cambridge Companion to Muḥammad. Edited by Jonathan E. Brockopp. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2010.

The Cambridge Medieval History. Vol. 2. Edited by H.M. Gwatkin et al. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1913.

Cameron, Averil. "How to Read Heresiology." *JMEMS* 33:3 (Fall 2003): 471-492.

Civilizations of the Ancient Near East. Vol. 2. Edited by J. Sasson et al. New York: Scribner, 1995.

Cole, Donald and Soraya Altorki. "Was Arabia Tribal? A Reinterpretation of the Pre-Oil Society." *JSAMES* 15:4 (1992): 71-87.

Conrad, Lawrence I. "Abraha and Muḥammad: Some Observations Apropos of Chronology and Literary 'Topoi' in the Early Arabic Historical Tradition." *BSOAS* 50:2 (1987): 225-240.

Cook, Michael. *Muhammad*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1983.

Crone, Patricia. *Meccan Trade and the Rise of Islam*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1987.

—. *Slaves On Horses: The Evolution of the Islamic Polity*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1980.

The Culture of Violence. Edited by Kumar Rupesinghe and Marcial Rubio C. Tokyo:
    United Nations University Press, 1994.

DeWeese, Devin A. *Islamization and Native Religion in the Golden Horde: Baba Tükles
    and Conversion to Islam in Historical and Epic Tradition*. Pennsylvania:
    Pennsylvania State University Press, 1994.

Donner, Fred M. "The Bakr b. Wā'il and Politics in Northeastern Arabia on the Eve of
    Islam." *SI* 51 (1980): 5-38.

—. *The Early Islamic Conquests*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1981.

—. "Mecca's Food Supplies and Muhammad's Boycott." *JESHO* 20:3 (1977): 249-266.

—. *Muhammad and the Believers: At the Origins of Islam*. Cambridge, Massachusetts:
    The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 2010.

—. *Narratives of Islamic Origins: The Beginnings of Islamic Historical Writing*.
    Princeton: Darwin Press, 1998.

—. "Quranic *Furqān*." *JSS* 52:2 (Autumn 2007): 279-300.

Dziekan, Marek M. "Searching for the Origin of Things: On the *'ilm al-awā'il* in the
    Culture of the Arabic Middle Ages." *SAI* 4 (1996): 13-27.

Eickelman, Dale F. "Musaylima: An Approach to the Social Anthropology of Seventh
    Century Arabia." *JESHO* 10:1 (Jul., 1967): 17-52.

The Expansion of the Early Islamic State. Edited by Fred M. Donner. Aldershot, Hants:
    Ashgate, 2008.

al-Fahad, Abdulaziz. *The 'Imama vs. the 'Iqal: Hadari-Bedouin Conflict and the
    Formation of the Saudi State*. Italy: European University Institute, 2002.

Fischer, David Hackett. *Historians' Fallacies: Toward a Logic of Historical Thought*.
    New York: Harper & Row, 1970.

Fück, J.W. Review of *The Battlefields of the Prophet Muhammad with Maps,
    Illustrations and Sketches*, by Muhammad Hamidullah. *Oriens* 8:2 (Dec., 1955):
    309.

Gafni, Isaiah. "Concepts of Periodization and Causality in Talmudic Literature." *JH*
    10:1 (Spring 1996): 21-38.

Galtung, Johan. "Cultural Violence." *JPR* 27:3 (Aug., 1990): 291-305.

—. *Essays in Peace Research*. Vol. 1. Copenhagen: Christian Ejlers, 1975.

Gil, Moshe. *A History of Palestine, 634-1099*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1997.

Gilliot, Claude. "Nochmals: Hieß der Prophet Muḥammad?" In *Die Entstehung einer Weltreligion II: Von der koranischen Bewegung zum Frühislam*. Vol. 2. Edited by Markus Groß et al., 53-95. Tübingen: Verlag Hans Schiler, 2011.

Ginzburg, Carlo. "Clues: Roots of a Scientific Paradigm." *TS* 7:3 (May, 1979): 273-288.

Goldziher, Ignaz. *Muslim Studies*. Vol. 1. Translated by C.R. Barber and S.M. Stern. London: George Allen & Unwin Ltd., 1967.

Görke, Andreas and Gregor Schoeler. "Reconstructing the Earliest *sīra* Texts: The Hiğra in the Corpus of ʿUrwa b. al-Zubayr." *Der Islam* 82 (2005): 209-220.

Hagen, Gottfried. "The Imagined and the Historical Muḥammad." *JAOS* 129:1 (2009): 97-111.

Hamidullah, Muhammad. *The Battlefields of the Prophet Muhammad with Maps, Illustrations and Sketches: A Contribution to Muslim Military History*. Hyderabad, Deccan: n.p., 1973.

ul-Haq, Muhammad Izhar. "Poetry of the *Riddah* Wars: Its Literary, Political and Religious Aspects." Ph.D. diss., Indiana University, 1998.

Hawting, Gerald R. *The Idea of Idolatry and the Emergence of Islam: From Polemic to History*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1999.

Hekman, Susan J. "Weber's Ideal Type: A Contemporary Reassessment." *Polity* 16:1 (Autumn 1983): 119-137.

Heraclitus. *Fragments: The Collected Wisdom of Heraclitus*. Translated by Brooks Haxton. New York: Viking Penguin, 2001.

Hillenbrand, Carole. *Turkish Myth and Muslim Symbol: The Battle of Manzikert*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 2007.

Hinds, Martin. *Studies in Early Islamic History*. Edited by Jere Bacharach et al. Princeton: Darwin Press, 1996.

Histories of the Middle East: Studies in Middle Eastern Society, Economy and Law in Honor of A.L. Udovitch. Edited by A. Sabra et al. Leiden: Brill, 2011.

Holes, Clive. *Modern Arabic: Structures, Functions, and Varieties*. Rev. ed. Washington, D.C.: Georgetown University Press, 2004.

Ibn ʿAsākir and Early Islamic History. Edited by James E. Lindsay. Princeton: Darwin Press, 2001.

Iranian Languages and Culture: Essays in Honor of Gernot Ludwig Windfuhr. Edited by Behrad Aghaei and M.R. Ghanoonparvar. Malibu and Costa Mesa: Mazda, 2012.

Jones, J.M.B. "The Chronology of the *Maghāzī* – A Textual Survey." *BSOAS* 19 (1957): 245-280.

—. "Ibn Isḥāq and al-Wāqidī: The Dream of ʿĀtika and the Raid to Nakhla in Relation to the Charge of Plagiarism." *BSOAS* 22:1/3 (1959): 41-51.

Kaegi, Walter E. *Heraclius: Emperor of Byzantium*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2003.

Kant, Immanuel. *Prolegomena to Any Future Metaphysics That Will Be Able to Present Itself as a Science*. Edited by P. Gray-Lucas. Manchester, England: Manchester University Press, 1978.

Kister, M.J. "al-Ḥīra: Some Notes on Its Relations with Arabia." *Arabica* 15:2 (June, 1968): 143-169.

—. "'…*illā bi-ḥaqqihi*…': A Study of an Early *ḥadīth*." *JSAI* 5 (1984): 33-52.

—. "The Market of the Prophet." *JESHO* 8:3 (Dec., 1965): 272-276.

—. "Mecca and Tamīm (Aspects of Their Relations)." *JESHO* 8:2 (Nov., 1965): 113-163.

—. "The Struggle against Musaylima and the Conquest of Yamāma." *JSAI* 27 (2002): 1-56.

Kostiner, Joseph. *The Making of Saudi Arabia 1916-1936: From Chieftaincy to Monarchical State*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1993.

Land Tenure and Social Transformation in the Middle East. Edited by Tarif Khalidi. Beirut: American University of Beirut, 1984.

Landau-Tasseron, Ella. "Asad from Jāhiliyya to Islam." *JSAI* 6 (1985): 1-28.

—. "Aspects of the *Ridda* Wars." Ph.D. diss., Jerusalem, 1981.

—. "The Participation of Ṭayyiʾ in the *Ridda*." *JSAI* 5 (1984): 53-71.

—. "Processes of Redaction: The Case of the Tamīmite Delegation to the Prophet Muḥammad." *BSOAS* 49:2 (1986): 253-270.

—. "Sayf Ibn 'Umar in Medieval and Modern Scholarship." *Der Islam* 67 (1990): 1-26.

Lecker, Michael. *The Banū Sulaym: A Contribution to the Study of Early Islam*. Jerusalem: Hebrew University of Jerusalem, 1989.

—. *The "Constitution of Medina": Muḥammad's First Legal Document*. Princeton: Darwin Press, 2004.

—. "Judaism among Kinda and the *Ridda* of Kinda." *JAOS* 115:4 (1995): 635-650.

—. "Kinda on the Eve of Islam and during the *Ridda*." *JRAS*. Third Series. 4:3 (1994): 333-356.

—. *Muslims, Jews and Pagans: Studies on Early Islamic Medina*. Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1995.

Lindner, Rudi. *Explorations in Ottoman Prehistory*. Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press, 2007.

—. *Nomads and Ottomans in Medieval Anatolia*. Bloomington: Research Institute for Inner Asian Studies, Indiana University, 1983.

—. "What Was a Nomadic Tribe?" *CSSH* 24:4 (Oct., 1982): 689-711.

Madelung, Wilferd. *The Succession to Muḥammad: A Study of the Early Caliphate*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1997.

Makin, Al. *Representing the Enemy: Musaylima in Muslim Literature*. Frankfurt am Main: Peter Lang, 2010.

—. "Re-thinking Other Claimants to Prophethood: The Case of Umayya Ibn Abī Ṣalt." *JJIS* 48:1 (2010): 165-190.

Manring, Rebecca J. *The Fading Light of Advaita Ācārya: Three Hagiographies*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2011.

Margoliouth, D.S. "On the Origin and Import of the Names *Muslim* and *Ḥanīf*." *JRAS* (1903): 467-493.

Master of the Age. Edited and translated by Paul Walker. London: I.B. Tauris, 2007.

Method and Theory in the Study of Islamic Origins. Edited by Herbert Berg. Leiden: Brill, 2003.

Morelli, Giovanni. *Italian Painters*. London: John Murray, 1900.

Morony, Michael G. *Iraq after the Muslim Conquest*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1984.

—. "Isolating Andalus." Review of *The Rise and Fall of the Party Kings: Politics and Society in Islamic Spain, 1002-1086*, by David Wasserstein. *JAOS* 108:3 (1988): 445-448.

Muranyi, Miklos. "Ein neuer Bericht über die Wahl des ersten Kalifen Abū Bakr." *Arabica* 25:3 (Sep., 1978): 233-260.

Musil, Alois. *Arabia Deserta: A Topographical Itinerary*. New York: American Geographical Society, 1927.

—. *Northern Neğd: A Topographical Itinerary*. New York: American Geographical Society, 1928.

Narrative Psychology: The Storied Nature of Human Conduct. Edited by Theodore R. Sarbin. Westport, Connecticut: Praeger, 1986.

Noth, Albrecht. "Der Charakter der ersten großen Sammlungen von Nachrichten zur frühen Kalifenzeit." *Der Islam* 47 (1971): 168-199.

Noth, Albrecht and Lawrence I. Conrad. *The Early Arabic Historical Tradition: A Source-Critical Study*. Translated by Michael Bonner. 2nd ed. Princeton: Darwin Press, 1994.

Peters, F.E. *Muhammad and the Origins of Islam*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1994.

—. *A Reader on Classical Islam*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1994.

Polsky, Andrew J. "No Tool is Perfect: Periodization in the Study of American Political Development." *Polity* 37:4 (Oct., 2005): 523-530.

Poverty and Charity in Middle Eastern Contexts. Edited by Michael Bonner, Mine Ener and Amy Singer. Albany: State University of New York Press, 2003.

Robinson, Chase F. *Islamic Historiography*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2003.

Rubin, Uri. *The Eye of the Beholder: The Life of Muḥammad as Viewed by the Early Muslims, A Textual Analysis*. Princeton: Darwin Press, 1995.

—. "Muḥammad's Curse of Muḍar and the Blockade of Mecca." *JESHO* 31:3 (1988): 249-264.

Schoeler, Gregor. *The Biography of Muḥammad: Nature and Authenticity*. Translated by Uwe Vagelpohl. Edited by James E. Montgomery. New York and London: Routledge, 2011.

Scholars and Scholarship of the Islamic World: Studies in Islamic History, Law, and Thought in Honor of Professor Michael Allan Cook on his Seventieth Birthday. Edited by Asad Q. Ahmed, Michael Bonner and Behnam Sadeghi. Leiden: Brill, 2012.

Sellheim, Rudolf. "Zu M.J. Kister's 'The Struggle against Musaylima.'" *Die Welt des Orients* 35 (2005): 158-168.

Shoufani, Elias S. *al-Riddah and the Muslim Conquest of Arabia*. Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1973.

Simon, Róbert. *Meccan Trade and Islam: Problems of Origins and Structure*. Budapest: Akadémiai Kiadó, 1989.

Solon of Athens: New Historical and Philological Approaches. Edited by Josine H. Blok et al. Leiden: Brill, 2006.

State and Society: The Emergence and Development of Social Hierarchy and Political Centralization. Edited by John Gledhill. London: Unwin Hyman, 1988.

Teall, John L. "The Grain Supply of the Byzantine Empire, 330-1025." *Dumbarton Oaks Papers* 13 (1959): 87-139.

Toolan, Michael J. *The Stylistics of Fiction: A Literary-linguistic Approach*. London and New York: Routledge, 1990.

Trimingham, Spencer J. *Christianity among the Arabs in Pre-Islamic Times*. London: Longman, 1979.

Tucker, Aviezer. "Miracles, Historical Testimonies, and Probabilities." *HT* 44:3 (Oct., 2005): 373-390.

Van Gelder, Geert Jan. *The Bad and the Ugly: Attitudes towards Invective Poetry (Hijā') in Classical Arabic Literature*. Leiden: Brill, 1989.

Verity, A.C.F. "Two Poems of Abū'l-'Alā al-Ma'arrī." *JAL* 2 (1971): 37-47.

Wansbrough, John. *The Sectarian Milieu: Content and Composition of Islamic Salvation History*. Amherst, New York: Prometheus Books, 2006.

Watson, Andrew M. *Agricultural Innovation in the Early Islamic World: The Diffusion of Crops and Farming Techniques, 700-1100*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1983.

Watt, W. Montgomery. *Muhammad at Mecca*. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1953.

—. *Muhammad at Medina*. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1956.

—. *Muhammad: Prophet and Statesman*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1961.

Weber, Max. *The Sociology of Religion*. Translated by Ephraim Fischoff. Boston: Beacon Press, 1963.

—. *The Theory of Social and Economic Organization*. Translated by A.M. Henderson and Talcott Parsons. London: Collier-Macmillan Limited, 1947.

—. *The Vocation Lectures*. Translated by Rodney Livingstone. Indianapolis: Hackett Publishing Company, 2004.

Wellhausen, Julius. "Prolegomena zur ältesten Geschichte des Islams." In *Skizzen und Vorarbeiten*. Volume 6. Berlin: Georg Reimer, 1899.

—. *The Religio-political Factions in Early Islam*. Edited by R.C. Ostle. Translated by R.C. Ostle and S.M. Walzer. Amsterdam: North-Holland Publishing Company, 1975.

White, Hayden. *Tropics of Discourse: Essays in Cultural Criticism*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1978.

Wolf, Eric R. "The Social Organization of Mecca and the Origins of Islam." *SJA* 7:4 (Winter, 1951): 329-356.

Woodhouse, W.J. *Solon the Liberator: A Study of the Agrarian Problem in Attika in the Seventh Century*. New York: Octagon Books, Inc., 1965.

Yoffee, Norman. *Myths of the Archaic State: Evolution of the Earliest Cities, States, and Civilizations*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2005.